Some flavors of string phenomenology

Michael Ratz

November 9 2021

supported by NSF

Based on collaborations with:

Y. Almumin, M. Blaszczyk, F. Brümmer, W. Buchmüller, M.–C. Chen, M. Fallbacher, M. Fischer, S. Groot Nibbelink, K. Hamaguchi, R. Kappl, V. Knapp–Peréz, T. Kobayashi, O. Lebedev, H.M. Lee, K.T. Mahanthappa, R. Mohapatra, A. Mütter, H.P. Nilles, B. Petersen, F. Plöger, S. Raby, M. Ramos–Hamud, S. Ramos–Sánchez, G. Ross, F. Ruehle, R. Schieren, K. Schmidt–Hoberg, Y. Shirman, S. Shukla, C. Staudt, M. Trapletti, A. Trautner, P. Vaudrevange, M. Waterbury & A. Wingerter

Some flavors of string phenomenology

Michael Ratz

November 9 2021

supported by NSF

Based on collaborations with:

Y. Almumin, M. Blaszczyk, F. Brümmer, W. Buchmüller, M.–C. Chen, M. Fallbacher, M. Fischer, S. Groot Nibbelink, K. Hamaguchi, R. Kappl, V. Knapp–Peréz, T. Kobayashi, O. Lebedev, H.M. Lee, K.T. Mahanthappa, R. Mohapatra, A. Mütter, H.P. Nilles, B. Petersen, F. Plöger, S. Raby, M. Ramos–Hamud, S. Ramos–Sánchez, G. Ross, F. Ruehle, R. Schieren, K. Schmidt–Hoberg, Y. Shirman, S. Shukla, C. Staudt, M. Trapletti, A. Trautner, P. Vaudrevange, M. Waterbury & A. Wingerter

Disclaimers:

1. The references are not extensive.
2. Will describe only a small subset of developments.
3. Will focus on heterotic orbifolds (and try to motivate why).

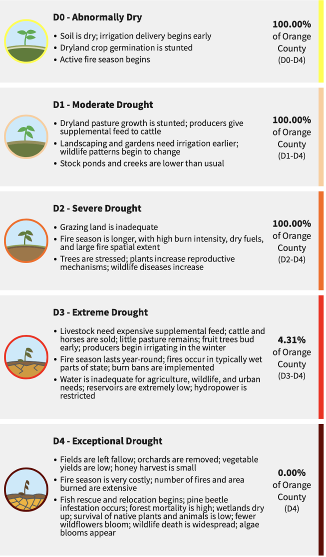
animalpath.org

Outline

&

More Disclaimers

Sorry, no swampland



D0 - Abnormally Dry

- Soil is dry; irrigation delivery begins early
- Dryland crop germination is stunted
- Active fire season begins

100.00% of Orange County (D0-D4)

D1 - Moderate Drought

- Dryland pasture growth is stunted; producers give supplemental feed to cattle
- Landscaping and gardens need irrigation earlier; wildlife patterns begin to change
- Stock ponds and creeks are lower than usual

100.00% of Orange County (D1-D4)

D2 - Severe Drought

- Grazing land is inadequate
- Fire season is longer, with high burn intensity, dry fuels, and large fire spatial extent
- Trees are stressed; plants increase reproductive mechanisms; wildlife diseases increase

100.00% of Orange County (D2-D4)

D3 - Extreme Drought

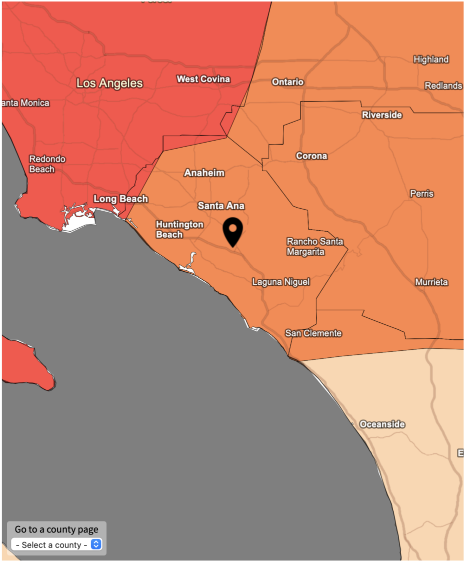
- Livestock need expensive supplemental feed; cattle and horses are sold; little pasture remains; fruit trees bud early; producers begin irrigating in the winter
- Fire season lasts year-round; fires occur in typically wet parts of state; burn bans are implemented
- Water is inadequate for agriculture, wildlife, and urban needs; reservoirs are extremely low; hydropower is restricted

4.31% of Orange County (D3-D4)

D4 - Exceptional Drought

- Fields are left fallow; orchards are removed; vegetable yields are low; honey harvest is small
- Fire season is very costly; number of fires and area burned are extensive
- Fish rescue and relocation begins; pine beetle infestation occurs; forest mortality is high; wetlands dry up; survival of native plants and animals is low; fewer wildflowers bloom; wildlife death is widespread; algae blooms appear

0.00% of Orange County (D4)



String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

- ☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

- ☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity
- ☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity

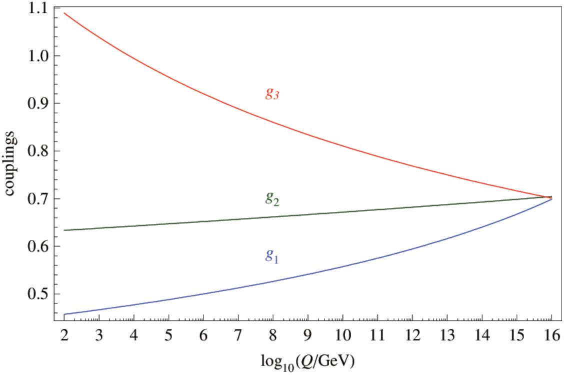
☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV

☞ Parameters of the SM:

- 3 gauge couplings

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

- ☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity
- ☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV
- ☞ Parameters of the SM:
  - 3 gauge couplings (grand unification?)



String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity

☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV

☞ Parameters of the SM:

- 3 gauge couplings
- 1 additional QCD parameter: θ_{QCD}

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

- ☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity
- ☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV
- ☞ Parameters of the SM:
  - 3 gauge couplings
  - 1 additional QCD parameter: θ_{QCD} (axion?)

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

- String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity
- If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV
- Parameters of the SM:
  - 3 gauge couplings
  - 1 additional QCD parameter: θ_{QCD}
  - 2 Higgs parameters

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

- ☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity
- ☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV
- ☞ Parameters of the SM:
  - 3 gauge couplings
  - 1 additional QCD parameter: θ_{QCD}
  - 2 Higgs parameters (hierarchy problem?)

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

- ☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity
- ☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV
- ☞ Parameters of the SM:
  - 3 gauge couplings
  - 1 additional QCD parameter: θ_{QCD}
  - 2 Higgs parameters
  - 12 masses

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

- ☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity
- ☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV
- ☞ Parameters of the SM:
  - 3 gauge couplings
  - 1 additional QCD parameter: θ_{QCD}
  - 2 Higgs parameters
  - 12 masses
  - $8+2$ mixing parameters

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

- ☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity
- ☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV
- ☞ Parameters of the SM:
  - 3 gauge couplings
  - 1 additional QCD parameter: θ_{QCD}
  - 2 Higgs parameters
  - 12 masses
  - $8+2$ mixing parameters

$$\left.\begin{array}{l}\text{12 masses}\\ 8+2\text{ mixing parameters}\end{array}\right\}\ 20+2\text{ flavor parameters}$$

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity

☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV

☞ Parameters of the SM:

- 3 gauge couplings
- 1 additional QCD parameter: θ_{QCD}
- 2 Higgs parameters

$$\left.\begin{array}{l}\bullet\ 12 \text{ masses}\\ \bullet\ 8+2 \text{ mixing parameters}\end{array}\right\}\ 20+2 \text{ flavor parameters}$$

➥ The bulk of the (ununderstood) parameters of the standard model resides in the flavor sector

String pheno as framework for physics beyond the SM

- ☞ String theory is our arguably best shot at a consistent theory of quantum gravity
- ☞ If string theory is to describe our world it needs to complete the SM in the UV
- ☞ Parameters of the SM:
  - 3 gauge couplings
  - 1 additional QCD parameter: θ_{QCD}
  - 2 Higgs parameters
  - 12 masses
  - $8+2$ mixing parameters

$$\left.\begin{array}{l}12 \text{ masses}\\ 8+2 \text{ mixing parameters}\end{array}\right\} 20+2 \text{ flavor parameters}$$

➥ The bulk of the (ununderstood) parameters of the standard model resides in the flavor sector

This talk:

Considerable attention will be given to questions of masses, mixing parameters and $\mathcal{CP}$–violating phases.

What else do we (believe to) know about BSM physics?

- ☞ Proton is very longlived: $\tau_p \gtrsim 10^{34}$ GeV

What else do we (believe to) know about BSM physics?

- ☞ Proton is very longlived: $\tau_p \gtrsim 10^{34}$ GeV
- ☞ Neutrinos are rather light: $m_\nu \lesssim 0.1$ eV

What else do we (believe to) know about BSM physics?

- ☞ Proton is very longlived: $\tau_p \gtrsim 10^{34}$ GeV
- ☞ Neutrinos are rather light: $m_\nu \lesssim 0.1$ eV
- ➥ In an effective field theory (EFT) approach we need either a high cutoff Λ or other suppression mechanisms (like symmetries), or both

What else do we (believe to) know about BSM physics?

- ☞ Proton is very longlived: $\tau_p \gtrsim 10^{34}$ GeV
- ☞ Neutrinos are rather light: $m_\nu \lesssim 0.1$ eV
- ➥ In an effective field theory (EFT) approach we need either a high cutoff Λ or other suppression mechanisms (like symmetries), or both
- ☞ Hierarchy $v_{\text{EW}} \ll \Lambda$ may be partially stabilized by supersymmetry

What else do we (believe to) know about BSM physics?

☞ Proton is very longlived: $\tau_p \gtrsim 10^{34}$ GeV

☞ Neutrinos are rather light: $m_\nu \lesssim 0.1$ eV

➥ In an effective field theory (EFT) approach we need either a high cutoff Λ or other suppression mechanisms (like symmetries), or both

☞ Hierarchy $v_{\text{EW}} \ll \Lambda$ may be partially stabilized by supersymmetry

☞ Getting the SM spectrum and gauge symmetries are only a small, yet necessary, part of the story

What else do we (believe to) know about BSM physics?

- ☞ Proton is very longlived: $\tau_p \gtrsim 10^{34}$ GeV
- ☞ Neutrinos are rather light: $m_\nu \lesssim 0.1$ eV
- ➥ In an effective field theory (EFT) approach we need either a high cutoff Λ or other suppression mechanisms (like symmetries), or both
- ☞ Hierarchy $v_{\mathsf{EW}} \ll \Lambda$ may be partially stabilized by supersymmetry
- ☞ Getting the SM spectrum and gauge symmetries are only a small, yet necessary, part of the story
- ☞ Ultimately a globally consistent stringy completion of the SM may give us crucial insights on the nature of dark matter (DM), inflation (or a mechanism that replaces it) etc. but we really have to be sure that the models we construct are not doomed right from the start

Strategy & outline

☞ Since the organizers pioneered string phenomenology using heterotic orbifolds, and for other reasons that I am going to explain, I will mainly focus on heterotic orbifolds.

Strategy & outline

- ☞ Since the organizers pioneered string phenomenology using heterotic orbifolds, and for other reasons that I am going to explain, I will mainly focus on heterotic orbifolds.
- ☞ The discussion will be "modular", i.e. I will present some ideas in the bottom–up approach and then discuss to which extent they can be embedded in explicit and consistent string models:
  - Origin of $\mathcal{CP}$ violation

Strategy & outline

- ☞ Since the organizers pioneered string phenomenology using heterotic orbifolds, and for other reasons that I am going to explain, I will mainly focus on heterotic orbifolds.

- ☞ The discussion will be “modular”, i.e. I will present some ideas in the bottom–up approach and then discuss to which extent they can be embedded in explicit and consistent string models:
  - Origin of $\mathcal{CP}$ violation (Theory of finite groups)

Strategy & outline

- ☞ Since the organizers pioneered string phenomenology using heterotic orbifolds, and for other reasons that I am going to explain, I will mainly focus on heterotic orbifolds.
- ☞ The discussion will be "modular", i.e. I will present some ideas in the bottom–up approach and then discuss to which extent they can be embedded in explicit and consistent string models:
  - Origin of $\mathcal{CP}$ violation (Theory of finite groups)
  - Masses and mixing parameters

Strategy & outline

- ☞ Since the organizers pioneered string phenomenology using heterotic orbifolds, and for other reasons that I am going to explain, I will mainly focus on heterotic orbifolds.
- ☞ The discussion will be "modular", i.e. I will present some ideas in the bottom–up approach and then discuss to which extent they can be embedded in explicit and consistent string models:
  - Origin of $\mathcal{CP}$ violation (Theory of finite groups)
  - Masses and mixing parameters ("Modular flavor symmetries")

Strategy & outline

- ☞ Since the organizers pioneered string phenomenology using heterotic orbifolds, and for other reasons that I am going to explain, I will mainly focus on heterotic orbifolds.
- ☞ The discussion will be "modular", i.e. I will present some ideas in the bottom–up approach and then discuss to which extent they can be embedded in explicit and consistent string models:
  - Origin of $\mathcal{CP}$ violation (Theory of finite groups)
  - Masses and mixing parameters ("Modular flavor symmetries")
  - Generation flow

Strategy & outline

- ☞ Since the organizers pioneered string phenomenology using heterotic orbifolds, and for other reasons that I am going to explain, I will mainly focus on heterotic orbifolds.
- ☞ The discussion will be "modular", i.e. I will present some ideas in the bottom–up approach and then discuss to which extent they can be embedded in explicit and consistent string models:
  - Origin of $\mathcal{CP}$ violation (Theory of finite groups)
  - Masses and mixing parameters ("Modular flavor symmetries")
  - Generation flow (Field theory dualities)

Strategy & outline

- ☞ Since the organizers pioneered string phenomenology using heterotic orbifolds, and for other reasons that I am going to explain, I will mainly focus on heterotic orbifolds.
- ☞ The discussion will be "modular", i.e. I will present some ideas in the bottom–up approach and then discuss to which extent they can be embedded in explicit and consistent string models:
  - Origin of $\mathcal{CP}$ violation (Theory of finite groups)
  - Masses and mixing parameters ("Modular flavor symmetries")
  - Generation flow (Field theory dualities)
  - Addressing the shortcomings of the MSSM

Strategy & outline

☞ Since the organizers pioneered string phenomenology using heterotic orbifolds, and for other reasons that I am going to explain, I will mainly focus on heterotic orbifolds.

☞ The discussion will be "modular", i.e. I will present some ideas in the bottom–up approach and then discuss to which extent they can be embedded in explicit and consistent string models:

- Origin of $\mathcal{CP}$ violation (Theory of finite groups)
- Masses and mixing parameters ("Modular flavor symmetries")
- Generation flow (Field theory dualities)
- Addressing the shortcomings of the MSSM (R symmetries)

Strategy & outline

- ☞ Since the organizers pioneered string phenomenology using heterotic orbifolds, and for other reasons that I am going to explain, I will mainly focus on heterotic orbifolds.
- ☞ The discussion will be "modular", i.e. I will present some ideas in the bottom–up approach and then discuss to which extent they can be embedded in explicit and consistent string models:
  - Origin of $\mathcal{CP}$ violation (Theory of finite groups)
  - Masses and mixing parameters ("Modular flavor symmetries")
  - Generation flow (Field theory dualities)
  - Addressing the shortcomings of the MSSM (R symmetries)
- ☞ Since all these topics are centered around symmetries, it is reasonable to consider orbifolds, which may be thought of as symmetry–enhanced points in moduli space

Flavor symmetries

Repetition of families

- ☞ Curious feature of the SM: repetition of families

Repetition of families

- ☞ Curious feature of the SM: repetition of families
- ☞ Possible “reason”: family symmetries

Repetition of families

- ☞ Curious feature of the SM: repetition of families
- ☞ Possible "reason": family symmetries
- ☞ Powerful tool: "Minimal Flavor Violation"

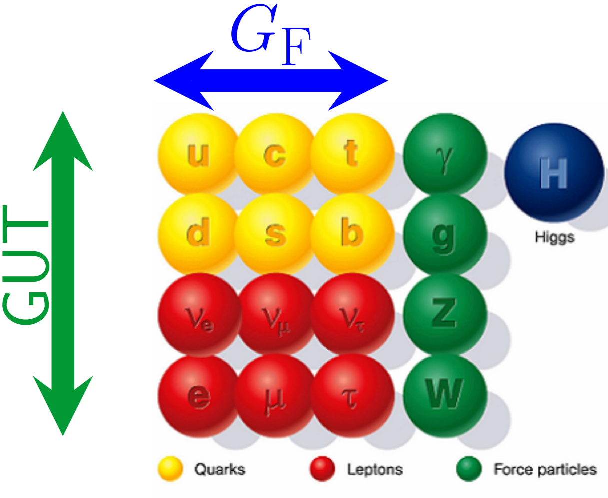
  Chivukula & Georgi [1987], Buras, Gambino, Gorbahn, Jäger & Silvestrini [2001], D'Ambrosio, Giudice, Isidori & Strumia [2002]

Repetition of families

- ☞ Curious feature of the SM: repetition of families
- ☞ Possible "reason": family symmetries
- ☞ Powerful tool: "Minimal Flavor Violation"
  Chivukula & Georgi [1987], Buras, Gambino, Gorbahn, Jäger & Silvestrini [2001], D'Ambrosio, Giudice, Isidori & Strumia [2002]
- ☞ Popular scheme in bottom–up model building: finite flavor symmetries

Why are symmetries popular/useful?

- ☞ Family symmetries G_{F} relate different families
  ↷ inter–family relations



Why are symmetries popular/useful?

- ☞ Family symmetries G_{F} relate different families
  $\curvearrowright$ inter–family relations
- ☞ Repetition of family can be attributed to symmetry

Why are finite symmetries popular/useful?

- ☞ Family symmetries G_F relate different families
  $\curvearrowright$ inter–family relations
- ☞ Repetition of family can be attributed to symmetry
- ☞ Anomaly constraints less stringent than for continuous flavor symmetries
  (Gauge origin of such symmetries will be discussed later)

Why are finite symmetries popular/useful?

- Family symmetries G_{F} relate different families
  $\curvearrowright$ inter–family relations
- Repetition of family can be attributed to symmetry
- Anomaly constraints less stringent than for continuous flavor symmetries
- Imposing symmetries may reduce number of free parameters

Why are finite symmetries popular/useful?

- ☞ Family symmetries G_{F} relate different families
  $\curvearrowright$ inter–family relations
- ☞ Repetition of family can be attributed to symmetry
- ☞ Anomaly constraints less stringent than for continuous flavor symmetries
- ☞ Imposing symmetries may reduce number of free parameters
- ☞ Imposing symmetries may even allow one to make nontrivial predictions

Why are finite symmetries popular/useful?

- ☞ Family symmetries G_{F} relate different families
  $\curvearrowright$ inter–family relations
- ☞ Repetition of family can be attributed to symmetry
- ☞ Anomaly constraints less stringent than for continuous flavor symmetries
- ☞ Imposing symmetries may reduce number of free parameters
- ☞ Imposing symmetries may even allow one to make nontrivial predictions
- ☞ Prominent example: A_4 ▸ details

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation from finite groups

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation in Nature

- ☞ $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$ so far only observed in flavor sector

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation in Nature

☞ $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$ so far only observed in flavor sector

➥ It appears natural to seek connection between flavor physics & $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation in Nature

☞ $\xcancel{\mathcal{CP}}$ so far only observed in flavor sector

➥ It appears natural to seek connection between flavor physics & $\xcancel{\mathcal{CP}}$

☞ Flavor structure may be partially explained by (non–Abelian discrete) flavor symmetries

huge literature

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation in Nature

☞ $\xcancel{\mathcal{CP}}$ so far only observed in flavor sector

➥ It appears natural to seek connection between flavor physics & $\xcancel{\mathcal{CP}}$

☞ Flavor structure may be partially explained by (non–Abelian discrete) flavor symmetries

huge literature

here:

Non–Abelian discrete (flavor) symmetry $G \leftrightarrow \xcancel{\mathcal{CP}}$

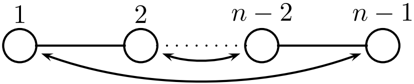
$\mathcal{CP}$ vs. outer automorphisms

☞ Most of continuous (i.e. Lie) groups:
  - real representations: canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ does the job

$\mathcal{CP}$ vs. outer automorphisms

☞ Most of continuous (i.e. Lie) groups:

- real representations: canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ does the job
- complex representations: $\mathcal{CP}$ involves outer automorphism

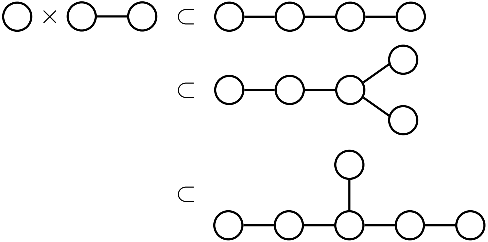


$\mathcal{CP}$ vs. outer automorphisms

☞ Most of continuous (i.e. Lie) groups:

- real representations: canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ does the job
- complex representations: $\mathcal{CP}$ involves outer automorphism

☞ Standard model gauge group & GUTs
$G_\mathrm{SM} = \mathrm{SU}(3)_\mathrm{C} \times \mathrm{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_Y \subset \mathrm{SU}(5) \subset \mathrm{SO}(10) \subset \mathrm{E}_6$:
$\mathcal{CP}$ involves outer automorphism and it is always possible to have $\mathcal{CP}$ conserved



$\mathcal{CP}$ vs. outer automorphisms

☞ Most of continuous (i.e. Lie) groups:

- real representations: canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ does the job
- complex representations: $\mathcal{CP}$ involves outer automorphism

☞ Standard model gauge group & GUTs
$G_{\mathrm{SM}} = \mathrm{SU}(3)_{\mathrm{C}} \times \mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_{Y} \subset \mathrm{SU}(5) \subset \mathrm{SO}(10) \subset \mathsf{E}_6$:
$\mathcal{CP}$ involves outer automorphism and it is always possible to have $\mathcal{CP}$ conserved

➥ Naïve expectation: also true for discrete (family) symmetries

$\mathcal{CP}$ vs. outer automorphisms

☞ Most of continuous (i.e. Lie) groups:

- real representations: canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ does the job
- complex representations: $\mathcal{CP}$ involves outer automorphism

☞ Standard model gauge group & GUTs
$G_{\mathrm{SM}} = \mathrm{SU}(3)_{\mathrm{C}} \times \mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_{Y} \subset \mathrm{SU}(5) \subset \mathrm{SO}(10) \subset \mathsf{E}_6$:
$\mathcal{CP}$ involves outer automorphism and it is always possible to have $\mathcal{CP}$ conserved

➥ Naïve expectation: also true for discrete (family) symmetries

this talk:

Chen & Mahanthappa [2009] ;Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]

Not at all true

How (not) to generalize $\mathcal{CP}$

- ☞ Outer automorphisms of finite groups comprise physically different transformations ▸ details

How (not) to generalize $\mathcal{CP}$

- ☞ Outer automorphisms of finite groups comprise physically different transformations ▸ details

proper $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- ☞ map field operators to *their own* Hermitean conjugates

How (not) to generalize $\mathcal{CP}$

- ☞ Outer automorphisms of finite groups comprise physically different transformations

▸ details

proper $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- ☞ map field operators to *their own* Hermitean conjugates
- ☞ violation of physical $\mathcal{CP}$ is prerequisite for a non–trivial

$$\varepsilon_{i\to f} = \frac{|\Gamma(i\to f)|^2 - \left|\Gamma\left(\bar\imath\to\overline{f}\right)\right|^2}{|\Gamma(i\to f)|^2 + \left|\Gamma\left(\bar\imath\to\overline{f}\right)\right|^2}$$

How (not) to generalize $\mathcal{CP}$

- Outer automorphisms of finite groups comprise physically different transformations

▸ details

proper $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- map field operators to *their own* Hermitean conjugates
- violation of physical $\mathcal{CP}$ is prerequisite for a non–trivial

$$\varepsilon_{i\to f} = \frac{\left|\Gamma\left(i\to f\right)\right|^2 - \left|\Gamma\left(\bar{\imath}\to \overline{f}\right)\right|^2}{\left|\Gamma\left(i\to f\right)\right|^2 + \left|\Gamma\left(\bar{\imath}\to \overline{f}\right)\right|^2}$$

➥ Connection to observed $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$, baryogenesis & ...

How (not) to generalize $\mathcal{CP}$

☞ Outer automorphisms of finite groups comprise physically different transformations

▸ details

proper $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

☞ map field operators to *their own* Hermitean conjugates

☞ violation of physical $\mathcal{CP}$ is prerequisite for a non–trivial

$$\varepsilon_{i\to f}=\frac{\left|\Gamma\left(i\to f\right)\right|^2-\left|\Gamma\left(\bar\imath\to\overline{f}\right)\right|^2}{\left|\Gamma\left(i\to f\right)\right|^2+\left|\Gamma\left(\bar\imath\to\overline{f}\right)\right|^2}$$

➥ Connection to observed $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$, baryogenesis & . . .

$\mathcal{CP}$–like transformations

☞ Map some field operators to some other operators

How (not) to generalize $\mathcal{CP}$

- ☞ Outer automorphisms of finite groups comprise physically different transformations ▸ details

proper $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- ☞ map field operators to *their own* Hermitean conjugates
- ☞ violation of physical $\mathcal{CP}$ is prerequisite for a non–trivial

$$\varepsilon_{i\to f}=\frac{|\Gamma\,(i\to f)|^2-\left|\Gamma\,(\bar{\imath}\to\overline{f})\right|^2}{|\Gamma\,(i\to f)|^2+\left|\Gamma\,(\bar{\imath}\to\overline{f})\right|^2}$$

- ➥ Connection to observed $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$, baryogenesis & ...

$\mathcal{CP}$–like transformations

- ☞ Map some field operators to some other operators
- ☞ Such transformations have sometimes been called "generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations" in the literature

How (not) to generalize $\mathcal{CP}$

- Outer automorphisms of finite groups comprise physically different transformations

▸ details

proper $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- map field operators to *their own* Hermitean conjugates
- violation of physical $\mathcal{CP}$ is prerequisite for a non–trivial

$$\varepsilon_{i\to f} = \frac{|\Gamma\left(i\to f\right)|^2 - \left|\Gamma\left(\bar{\imath}\to\overline{f}\right)\right|^2}{|\Gamma\left(i\to f\right)|^2 + \left|\Gamma\left(\bar{\imath}\to\overline{f}\right)\right|^2}$$

➥ Connection to observed $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$, baryogenesis & . . .

$\mathcal{CP}$–like transformations

- Map some field operators to some other operators
- Such transformations have sometimes been called “generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations” in the literature
- However, imposing $\mathcal{CP}$–like transformations does **not** imply physical $\mathcal{CP}$ conservation

How (not) to generalize $\mathcal{CP}$

- ☞ Outer automorphisms of finite groups comprise physically different transformations

▸ details

proper $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- ☞ map field operators to *their own* Hermitean conjugates
- ☞ violation of physical $\mathcal{CP}$ is prerequisite for a non–trivial

$$\varepsilon_{i\to f} = \frac{\left|\Gamma\left(i\to f\right)\right|^2 - \left|\Gamma\left(\bar\imath\to\overline{f}\right)\right|^2}{\left|\Gamma\left(i\to f\right)\right|^2 + \left|\Gamma\left(\bar\imath\to\overline{f}\right)\right|^2}$$

- ➥ Connection to observed $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$, baryogenesis & ...

$\mathcal{CP}$–like transformations

- ☞ Map some field operators to some other operators
- ☞ Such transformations have sometimes been called “generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations” in the literature
- ☞ However, imposing $\mathcal{CP}$–like transformations does **not** imply physical $\mathcal{CP}$ conservation
- ➥ **NO** connection to observed $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$, baryogenesis & ...

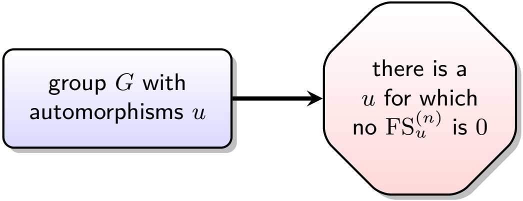
Three types of groups

Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]

group G with automorphisms u

Three types of groups

Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]

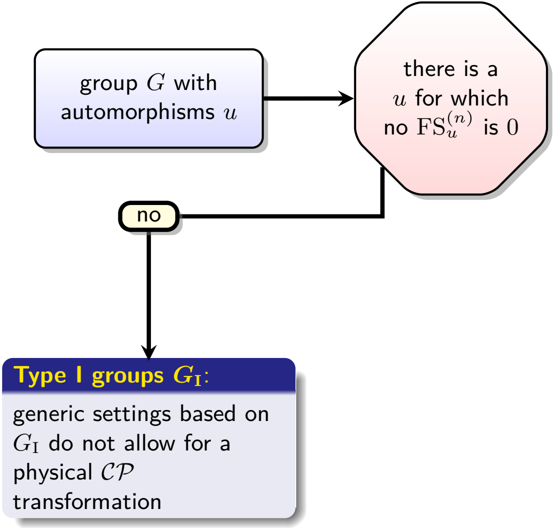


group G with automorphisms u

there is a u for which no $\mathrm{FS}_u^{(n)}$ is 0

Three types of groups

Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]



group G with automorphisms u

there is a u for which no $\mathrm{FS}_u^{(n)}$ is 0

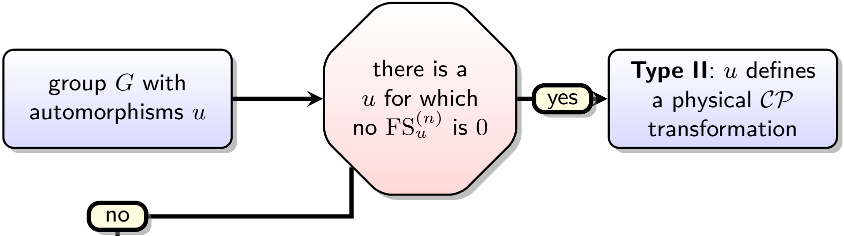
no

Type I groups G_{I}:

generic settings based on G_{I} do not allow for a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

Three types of groups

Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]



group G with automorphisms u

there is a u for which no $\mathrm{FS}_u^{(n)}$ is 0

yes

Type II: u defines a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

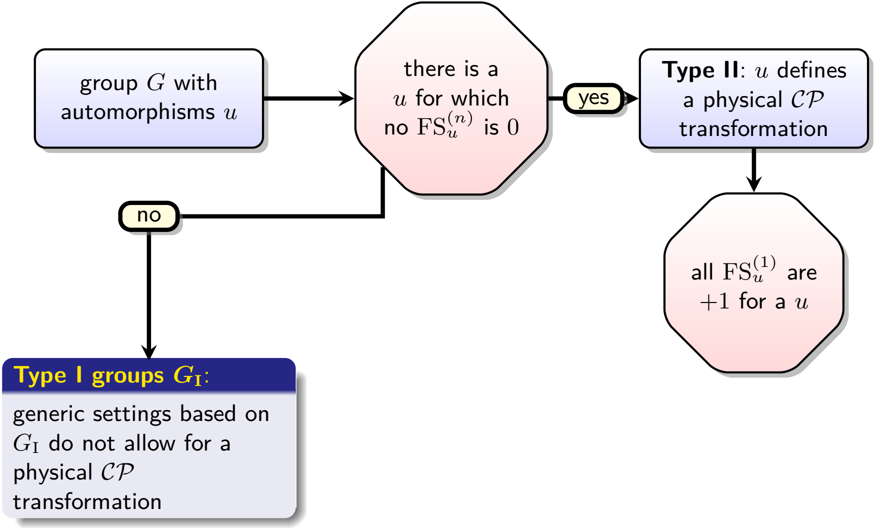
no

Type I groups G_I:

generic settings based on G_I do not allow for a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

Three types of groups

Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]



group G with automorphisms u

there is a u for which no $\mathrm{FS}_u^{(n)}$ is 0

yes

Type II: u defines a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

all $\mathrm{FS}_u^{(1)}$ are $+1$ for a u

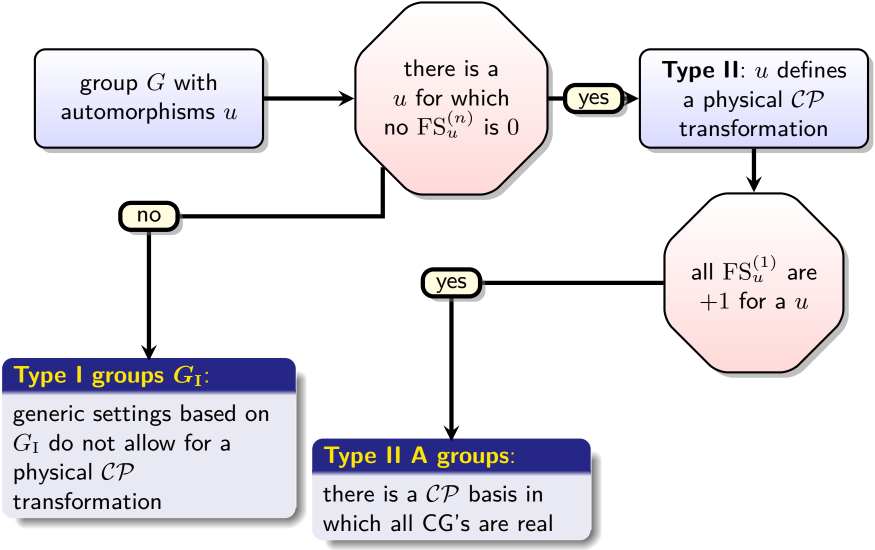
no

Type I groups G_{I}:

generic settings based on G_{I} do not allow for a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

Three types of groups

Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]



group G with automorphisms u

there is a u for which no $\mathrm{FS}_u^{(n)}$ is 0

yes

Type II: u defines a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

all $\mathrm{FS}_u^{(1)}$ are $+1$ for a u

yes

no

Type I groups G_{I}:

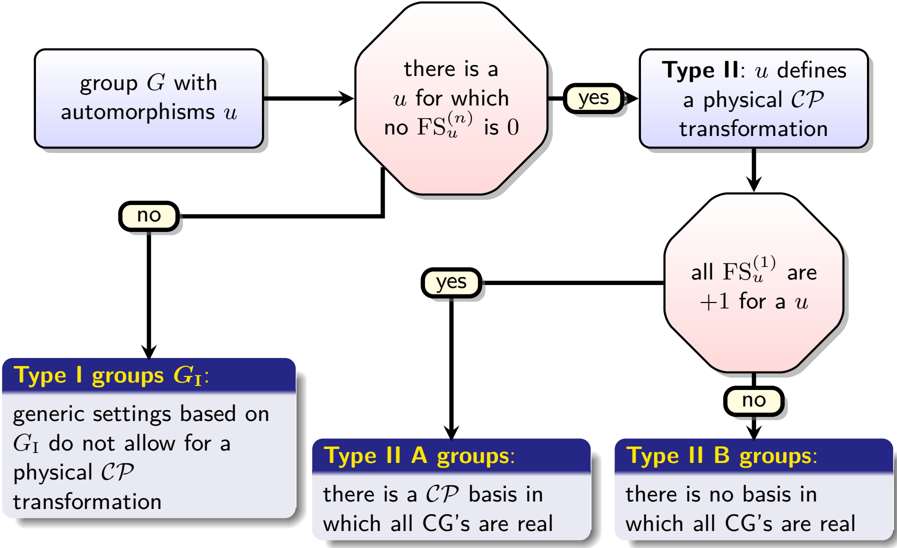
generic settings based on G_{I} do not allow for a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

Type II A groups:

there is a $\mathcal{CP}$ basis in which all CG's are real

Three types of groups

Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]



group G with automorphisms u

there is a u for which no $\mathrm{FS}_u^{(n)}$ is 0

yes

Type II: u defines a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

no

all $\mathrm{FS}_u^{(1)}$ are $+1$ for a u

yes

no

Type I groups G_{I}:

generic settings based on G_{I} do not allow for a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

Type II A groups:

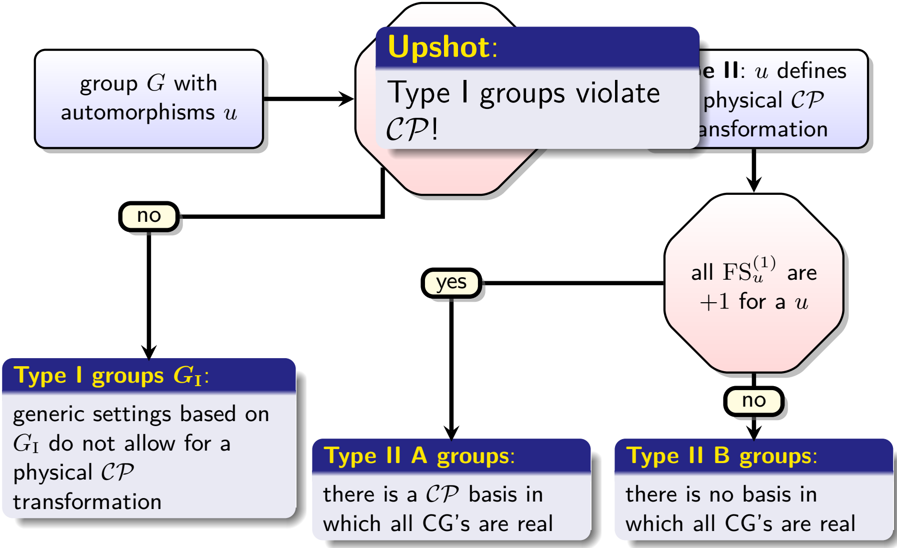
there is a $\mathcal{CP}$ basis in which all CG's are real

Type II B groups:

there is no basis in which all CG's are real

Three types of groups

Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]



group G with automorphisms u

Upshot:

Type I groups violate $\mathcal{CP}$!

e **II**: u defines physical $\mathcal{CP}$ ansformation

no

all $\mathrm{FS}_u^{(1)}$ are $+1$ for a u

yes

no

Type I groups G_I:

generic settings based on G_I do not allow for a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

Type II A groups:

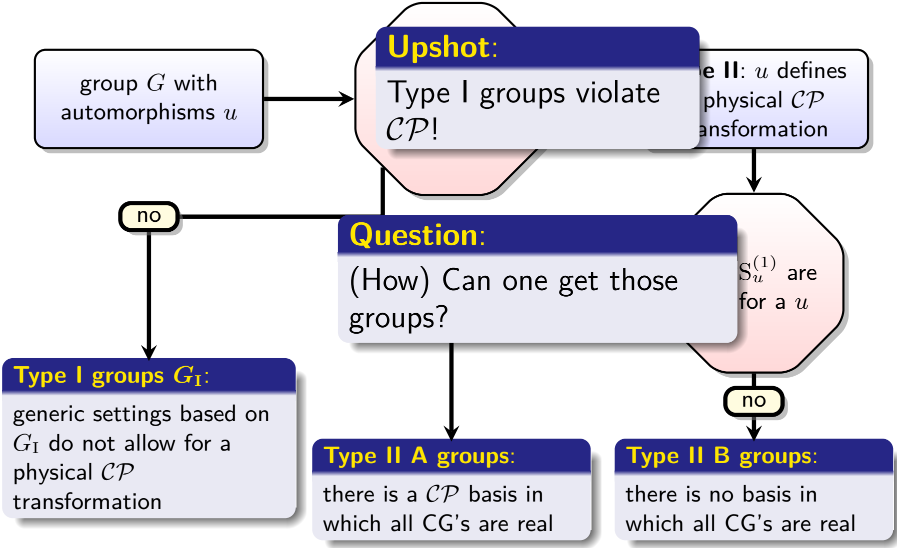
there is a $\mathcal{CP}$ basis in which all CG's are real

Type II B groups:

there is no basis in which all CG's are real

Three types of groups

Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]



group G with automorphisms u

Upshot:

Type I groups violate $\mathcal{CP}$!

e II: u defines
physical $\mathcal{CP}$
ansformation

no

Question:

(How) Can one get those groups?

$\mathrm{S}_u^{(1)}$ are
for a u

no

Type I groups G_{I}:

generic settings based on G_{I} do not allow for a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

Type II A groups:

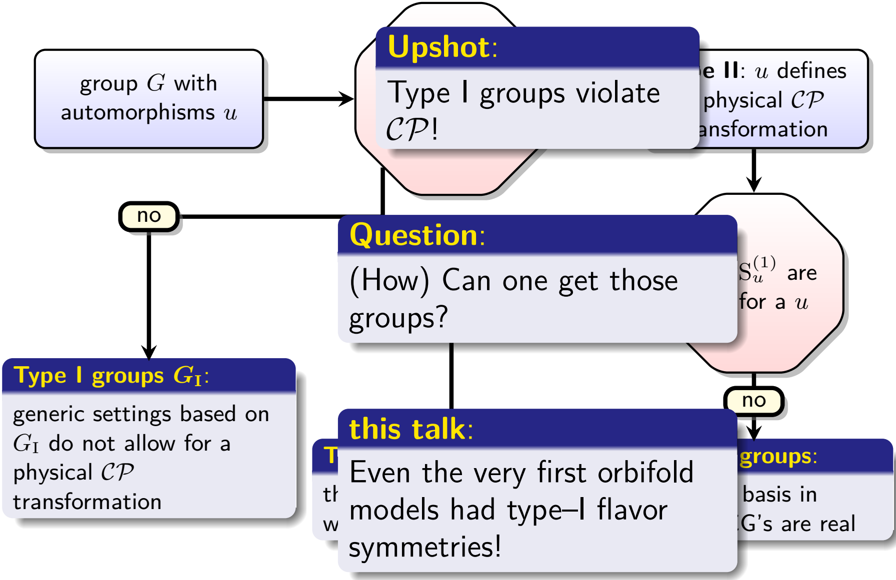
there is a $\mathcal{CP}$ basis in which all CG's are real

Type II B groups:

there is no basis in which all CG's are real

Three types of groups

Chen, Fallbacher, Mahanthappa, M.R. & Trautner [2014]



group G with automorphisms u

e II: u defines physical $\mathcal{CP}$ ansformation

$\mathrm{S}_u^{(1)}$ are for a u

no

no

Upshot:

Type I groups violate $\mathcal{CP}$!

Question:

(How) Can one get those groups?

Type I groups G_{I}:

generic settings based on G_{I} do not allow for a physical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

T

th

w

this talk:

Even the very first orbifold models had type–I flavor symmetries!

groups:

basis in

G's are real

Examples

will be discussed later

- ☞ type I : all odd order non–Abelian groups

group	$\mathbb{Z}_5 \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_4$	T_7	$\Delta(27)$	$\mathbb{Z}_9 \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_3$	$\Delta(54)$
SG	(20,3)	(21,1)	(27,3)	(27,4)	(54,8)

Examples

- ☞ type I : all odd order non–Abelian groups

group	$\mathbb{Z}_5 \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_4$	T_7	$\Delta(27)$	$\mathbb{Z}_9 \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_3$	$\Delta(54)$
SG	(20,3)	(21,1)	(27,3)	(27,4)	(54,8)

- ☞ type II A : dihedral & all Abelian groups

group	S_3	Q_8	A_4	$\mathbb{Z}_3 \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_8$	T'	S_4	A_5
SG	(6,1)	(8,4)	(12,3)	(24,1)	(24,3)	(24,12)	(60,5)

Examples

- ☞ type I : all odd order non–Abelian groups

group	$\mathbb{Z}_5 \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_4$	T_7	$\Delta(27)$	$\mathbb{Z}_9 \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_3$	$\Delta(54)$
SG	(20,3)	(21,1)	(27,3)	(27,4)	(54,8)

- ☞ type II A : dihedral & all Abelian groups

group	S_3	Q_8	A_4	$\mathbb{Z}_3 \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_8$	T'	S_4	A_5
SG	(6,1)	(8,4)	(12,3)	(24,1)	(24,3)	(24,12)	(60,5)

- ☞ type II B

group	$\Sigma(72)$	$((\mathbb{Z}_3 \times \mathbb{Z}_3) \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_4) \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_4$
SG	(72,41)	(144,120)

$\Delta(54)$

from a

$\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane

First 3 family models from stringy orbifolds

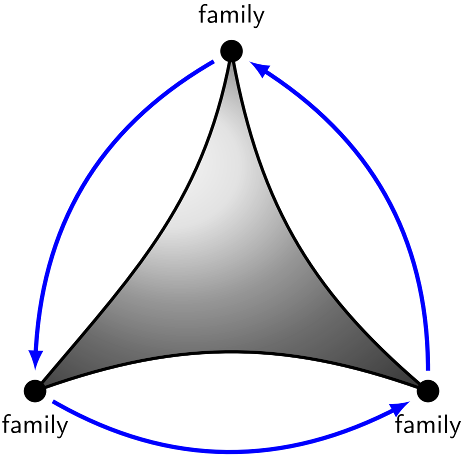
Ibáñez, Kim, Nilles & Quevedo [1987]

☞ Very first stringy model of particle physics based on $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold

First 3 family models from stringy orbifolds

Ibáñez, Kim, Nilles & Quevedo [1987]

- ☞ Very first stringy model of particle physics based on $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold
  - ☞ Three generations may live on equivalent fixed points
  - ☞ Permutation symmetry of fixed points/families

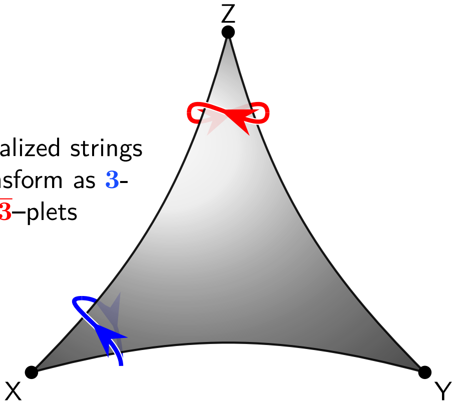


First 3 family models from stringy orbifolds

Ibáñez, Kim, Nilles & Quevedo [1987]

- Very first stringy model of particle physics based on $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold
  - Three generations may live on equivalent fixed points
  - Permutation symmetry of fixed points/families

    Kobayashi, Nilles, Plöger, Raby & M.R. [2007]
  - ➥ $\Delta(54)$ flavor/family symmetry

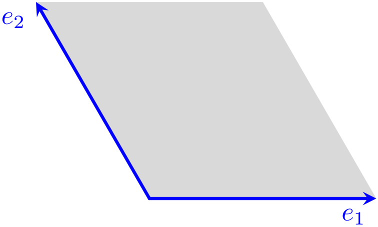


localized strings tansform as $\mathbf{3}$- or $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$–plets

$\mathbb{T}^2/\mathbb{Z}_3$ Orbifold GUT

Biermann, Mütter, Parr, M.R. & Vaudrevange [2019] , see also Guralnik & Ramgoolam [1997]

- 6d with gauge symmetry $\mathcal{G} = \mathrm{SU}(3)$ and two dimensions compactified on torus with $|e_1| = |e_2|$ with $e_1 \cdot e_2 = -{|e_1|^2}/{2}$



$\mathbb{T}^2/\mathbb{Z}_3$ Orbifold GUT

Biermann, Mütter, Parr, M.R. & Vaudrevange [2019] , see also Guralnik & Ramgoolam [1997]

- ☞ 6d with gauge symmetry $\mathcal{G} = \mathrm{SU}(3)$ and two dimensions compactified on torus with $|e_1| = |e_2|$ with $e_1 \cdot e_2 = -|e_1|^2/2$
- ☞ Associated gauge embedding

$$P = \begin{pmatrix} \omega & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \omega^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SU}(3) \quad \text{where} \quad P^3 = \mathbb{1}$$

$\mathbb{T}^2/\mathbb{Z}_3$ Orbifold GUT

Biermann, Mütter, Parr, M.R. & Vaudrevange [2019] , see also Guralnik & Ramgoolam [1997]

- ☞ 6d with gauge symmetry $\mathcal{G} = \mathrm{SU}(3)$ and two dimensions compactified on torus with $|e_1| = |e_2|$ with $e_1 \cdot e_2 = -{|e_1|^2}/{2}$
- ☞ Associated gauge embedding

$$P = \begin{pmatrix} \omega & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \omega^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SU}(3) \quad \text{where} \quad P^3 = \mathbb{1}$$

- ☞ Condition for gauge symmetry

$$[P, U_{(k)}] = \exp\left(\frac{2\pi\mathrm{i}\, k}{3}\right)\mathbb{1} \quad \text{where} \quad k \in \{0,1,2\}$$

$\mathbb{T}^2/\mathbb{Z}_3$ Orbifold GUT

Biermann, Mütter, Parr, M.R. & Vaudrevange [2019] , see also Guralnik & Ramgoolam [1997]

- 6d with gauge symmetry $\mathcal{G} = \mathrm{SU}(3)$ and two dimensions compactified on torus with $|e_1| = |e_2|$ with $e_1 \cdot e_2 = -{}^{|e_1|^2}/_2$
- Associated gauge embedding

$$P \;=\; \begin{pmatrix} \omega & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \omega^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \;\in\; \mathrm{SU}(3) \quad \text{where} \quad P^3 \;=\; \mathbb{1}$$

- Condition for gauge symmetry

$$[P, U_{(k)}] \;=\; \exp\left(\frac{2\pi\mathrm{i}\, k}{3}\right)\mathbb{1} \quad \text{where} \quad k \;\in\; \{0,1,2\}$$

- Residual symmetries

$$U_{(0)} \;=\; \begin{pmatrix} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}(\alpha+\beta)} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}(\alpha-\beta)} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mathrm{e}^{-2\mathrm{i}\alpha} \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad U_{(1)} \;=\; \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

$\mathbb{T}^2/\mathbb{Z}_3$ Orbifold GUT

Biermann, Mütter, Parr, M.R. & Vaudrevange [2019] , see also Guralnik & Ramgoolam [1997]

- 6d with gauge symmetry $\mathcal{G} = \mathrm{SU}(3)$ and two dimensions compactified on torus with $|e_1| = |e_2|$ with $e_1 \cdot e_2 = -{}^{|e_1|^2}/_2$
- Associated gauge embedding

$$P = \begin{pmatrix} \omega & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \omega^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SU}(3) \quad \text{where} \quad P^3 = \mathbb{1}$$

- Condition for gauge symmetry

$$[P, U_{(k)}] = \exp\left(\frac{2\pi \mathrm{i}\, k}{3}\right)\mathbb{1} \quad \text{where} \quad k \in \{0,1,2\}$$

- Residual symmetries

$$U_{(0)} = \begin{pmatrix} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}(\alpha+\beta)} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}(\alpha-\beta)} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mathrm{e}^{-2\mathrm{i}\alpha} \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad U_{(1)} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

- Altogether: $\mathrm{SU}(3) \xrightarrow{\mathbb{Z}_3^{\text{orb.}}} \Big[\mathrm{U}(1) \times \mathrm{U}(1)\Big] \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_3$

$\Delta(54)$ from $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold planes

Beye, Kobayashi & Kuwakino [2014, 2015]

☞ The $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge symmetry arises at the self–dual radius

$\Delta(54)$ from $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold planes

Beye, Kobayashi & Kuwakino [2014, 2015]

- ☞ The $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge symmetry arises at the self–dual radius
- ☞ Away from this special point the $\mathrm{U}(1)$ symmetries get broken

$$\mathrm{SU}(3) \quad \xrightarrow{\mathbb{Z}_3^{\mathrm{orb.}}} \quad \Big[\mathrm{U}(1)\times\mathrm{U}(1)\Big]\rtimes S_3$$

origin clarified

$\Delta(54)$ from $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold planes

Beye, Kobayashi & Kuwakino [2014, 2015]

- ☞ The $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge symmetry arises at the self–dual radius
- ☞ Away from this special point the $\mathrm{U}(1)$ symmetries get broken

$$\begin{aligned}\mathrm{SU}(3) \quad &\xrightarrow{\mathbb{Z}_3^{\mathrm{orb.}}} \quad \Bigl[\mathrm{U}(1)\times\mathrm{U}(1)\Bigr]\rtimes S_3\\ &\xrightarrow{R\neq R_{\mathrm{crit}}} \quad \Bigl[\mathbb{Z}_3\times\mathbb{Z}_3\Bigr]\rtimes S_3 \;=\; \Delta(54)\end{aligned}$$

$\Delta(54)$ from $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold planes

Beye, Kobayashi & Kuwakino [2014, 2015]

- ☞ The $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge symmetry arises at the self–dual radius
- ☞ Away from this special point the $\mathrm{U}(1)$ symmetries get broken

$$\begin{aligned}\mathrm{SU}(3) \quad & \xrightarrow{\mathbb{Z}_3^{\mathrm{orb.}}} \quad \Big[\mathrm{U}(1)\times\mathrm{U}(1)\Big]\rtimes S_3 \\ & \xrightarrow{R\neq R_{\mathrm{crit}}} \quad \Big[\mathbb{Z}_3\times\mathbb{Z}_3\Big]\rtimes S_3 \;=\; \Delta(54)\end{aligned}$$

- ☞ Detailed understanding of *gauge* origin of $\Delta(54)$ flavor symmetry

$\Delta(54)$ from $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold planes

Beye, Kobayashi & Kuwakino [2014, 2015]

- ☞ The $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge symmetry arises at the self–dual radius
- ☞ Away from this special point the $\mathrm{U}(1)$ symmetries get broken

$$\begin{aligned}\mathrm{SU}(3) \quad &\xrightarrow{\mathbb{Z}_3^{\text{orb.}}} \quad \Big[\mathrm{U}(1)\times\mathrm{U}(1)\Big]\rtimes S_3\\ &\xrightarrow{R\neq R_{\text{crit}}} \quad \Big[\mathbb{Z}_3\times\mathbb{Z}_3\Big]\rtimes S_3 \;=\; \Delta(54)\end{aligned}$$

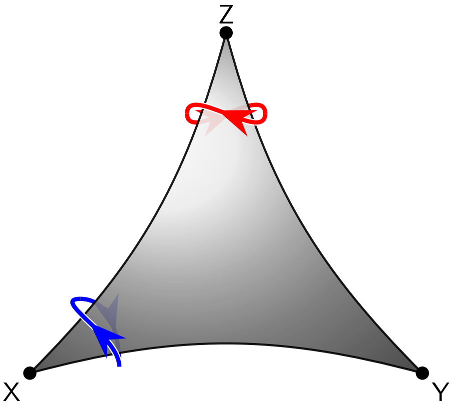
- ☞ Detailed understanding of *gauge* origin of $\Delta(54)$ flavor symmetry
- ☞ Part of a so–called eclectic symmetry (see later)

Nilles, Ramos–Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2021]

$$G_{\text{ecl}} \;=\; \Delta(54)\cup T'\cup\mathbb{Z}_9^R\cup\mathbb{Z}_2^{\mathcal{CP}}$$

$\Delta(54)$ from a $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane

☞ $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane without Wilson lines leads to a $\Delta(54)$ flavor symmetry



localized strings tansform as $\mathbf{3}$- or $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$–plets

$\Delta(54)$ from a $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane without Wilson lines leads to a $\Delta(54)$ flavor symmetry
- ☞ Explicit model

Carballo-Pérez, Peinado & Ramos-Sánchez [2016]

#	irrep	$\Delta(54)$	label
3	$(\mathbf{3},\mathbf{2})_{\frac{1}{6}}$	$\mathbf{3}_{11}$	Q_i
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1})_{-\frac{2}{3}}$	$\mathbf{3}_{11}$	$\overline{u}_i$
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1})_{\frac{1}{3}}$	$\mathbf{3}_{11}$	$\overline{d}_i$
3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})_{-\frac{1}{2}}$	$\mathbf{3}_{11}$	L_i
3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1}$	$\mathbf{3}_{11}$	$\overline{e}_i$
3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	$\mathbf{3}_{12}$	$\overline{\nu}_i$

$\Delta(54)$ from a $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane without Wilson lines leads to a $\Delta(54)$ flavor symmetry
- ☞ Explicit model Carballo-Pérez, Peinado & Ramos-Sánchez [2016]
- ☞ Quarks and leptons transform as $\mathbf{3}$–plets (or $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$–plets) of $\Delta(54)$

$\Delta(54)$ from a $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane without Wilson lines leads to a $\Delta(54)$ flavor symmetry
- ☞ Explicit model Carballo-Pérez, Peinado & Ramos-Sánchez [2016]
- ☞ Quarks and leptons transform as $\mathbf{3}$–plets (or $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$–plets) of $\Delta(54)$
- ☞ $\Delta(54)$ is type I group: $\curvearrowright$ $\mathcal{CP}$ violation for free?

$\Delta(54)$ from a $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane without Wilson lines leads to a $\Delta(54)$ flavor symmetry
- ☞ Explicit model Carballo-Pérez, Peinado & Ramos-Sánchez [2016]
- ☞ Quarks and leptons transform as $\mathbf{3}$–plets (or $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$–plets) of $\Delta(54)$
- ☞ $\Delta(54)$ is type I group: $\curvearrowright$ $\mathcal{CP}$ violation for free?
- ☞ Not that simple! If the representation content is very special, one *can* impose a $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\exists\ \text{out}\ :\ \mathbf{3}_i \xleftrightarrow{\text{out}} \overline{\mathbf{3}}_i \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{1}_i \xleftrightarrow{\text{out}} \overline{\mathbf{1}}_i$$

$\Delta(54)$ from a $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold plane without Wilson lines leads to a $\Delta(54)$ flavor symmetry
- ☞ Explicit model Carballo-Pérez, Peinado & Ramos-Sánchez [2016]
- ☞ Quarks and leptons transform as $\mathbf{3}$–plets (or $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$–plets) of $\Delta(54)$
- ☞ $\Delta(54)$ is type I group: $\curvearrowright$ $\mathcal{CP}$ violation for free?
- ☞ Not that simple! If the representation content is very special, one *can* impose a $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation
- ☞ At the massless level, only 3- and 1–dimensional representations occur $\curvearrowright$ a class–inverting outer automorphism exists $\curvearrowright$ a $\mathcal{CP}$ candidate exists

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation

in the

$\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation from strings

☞ However, at the massive level $\Delta(54)$ $\mathbf{2}$–plets arise

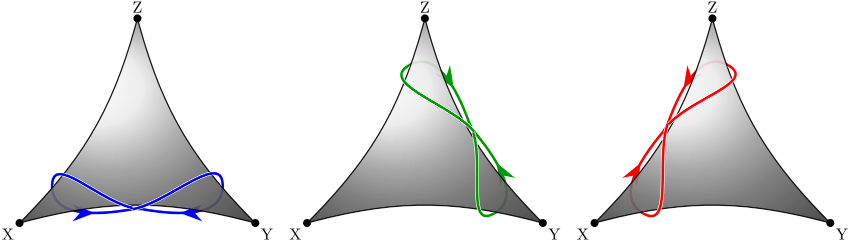
Nilles, M.R., Trautner & Vaudrevange [2018]

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation from strings

- However, at the massive level $\Delta(54)$ $\mathbf{2}$–plets arise

  Nilles, M.R., Trautner & Vaudrevange [2018]

- Doublets $\mathbf{2}_1$, $\mathbf{2}_3$ and $\mathbf{2}_4$ correspond to linear combinations of strings that wind around two different fixed points in opposite directions

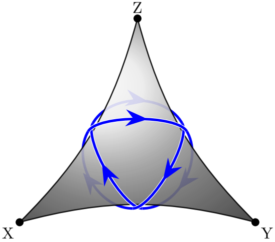


$\mathcal{CP}$ violation from strings

- However, at the massive level $\Delta(54)$ $\mathbf{2}$–plets arise

Nilles, M.R., Trautner & Vaudrevange [2018]

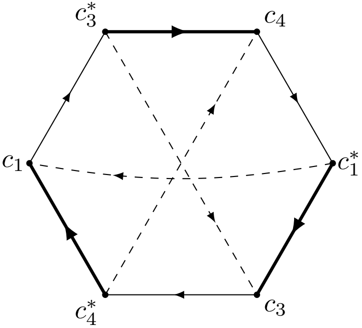
- Doublets $\mathbf{2}_1$, $\mathbf{2}_3$ and $\mathbf{2}_4$ correspond to linear combinations of strings that wind around two different fixed points in opposite directions
- Doublet $\mathbf{2}_2$



$\mathcal{CP}$ violation from strings

☞ Doublets save the day

Nilles, M.R., Trautner & Vaudrevange [2018]



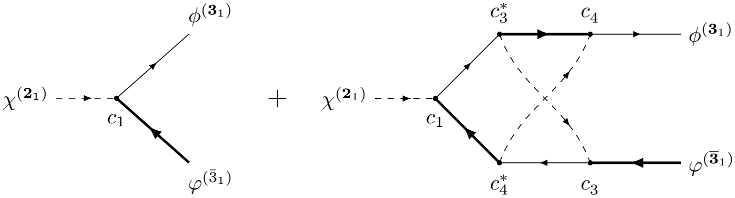
- We follow invariant approach — Bernabeu, Branco & Gronau [1986]
- Super powerful tool: `GroupMath` — Fonseca [2021]

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation from strings

- ☞ Doublets save the day

Nilles, M.R., Trautner & Vaudrevange [2018]

- ☞ Physical $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$ in doublet decay



$\mathcal{CP}$ violation from strings

- ☞ Doublets save the day

Nilles, M.R., Trautner & Vaudrevange [2018]

- ☞ Physical $\not{\mathcal{CP}}$ in doublet decay
- ☞ Phenomenological implications not worked out

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation from strings

- ☞ Doublets save the day

Nilles, M.R., Trautner & Vaudrevange [2018]

- ☞ Physical $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$ in doublet decay
- ☞ Phenomenological implications not worked out

bottom–line:

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation can come from group theory in UV complete settings in which the origin of the flavor group is fully understood

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation with an unbroken $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

- Type I groups can be embedded in $\mathrm{SU}(N)$

no $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

has $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation with an unbroken $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

☞ Type I groups can be embedded in $\mathrm{SU}(N)$

➥ Question: at which stage gets $\mathcal{CP}$ broken?

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation with an unbroken $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

- ☞ Type I groups can be embedded in $\mathrm{SU}(N)$
- ➥ Question: at which stage gets $\mathcal{CP}$ broken?
- ☞ Possible options include:
  - $\mathcal{CP}$ gets broken by the VEV that breaks $\mathrm{SU}(N)$ to G

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation with an unbroken $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

- ☞ Type I groups can be embedded in $\mathrm{SU}(N)$
- ➥ Question: at which stage gets $\mathcal{CP}$ broken?
- ☞ Possible options include:
  - $\mathcal{CP}$ gets broken by the VEV that breaks $\mathrm{SU}(N)$ to G
  - the resulting setting always has additional symmetries and does not violate $\mathcal{CP}$

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation with an unbroken $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

- ☞ Type I groups can be embedded in $\mathrm{SU}(N)$
- ➥ Question: at which stage gets $\mathcal{CP}$ broken?
- ☞ Possible options include:
  - $\mathcal{CP}$ gets broken by the VEV that breaks $\mathrm{SU}(N)$ to G
  - the resulting setting always has additional symmetries and does not violate $\mathcal{CP}$
- ☞ Surprisingly the answer is none of the above

M.R. & Trautner [2017]

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation with an unbroken $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

- ☞ Type I groups can be embedded in $\mathrm{SU}(N)$
- ➥ Question: at which stage gets $\mathcal{CP}$ broken?
- ☞ Possible options include:
  - $\mathcal{CP}$ gets broken by the VEV that breaks $\mathrm{SU}(N)$ to G
  - the resulting setting always has additional symmetries and does not violate $\mathcal{CP}$
- ☞ Surprisingly the answer is none of the above

M.R. & Trautner [2017]

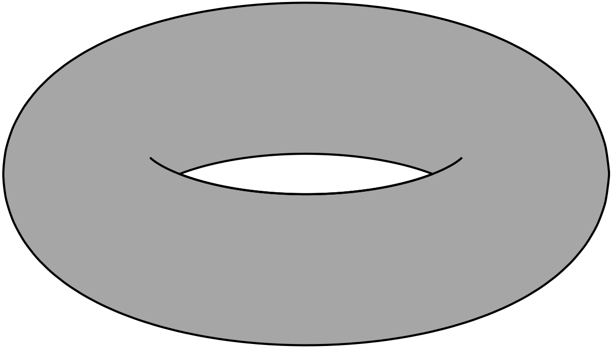
- ☞ Rather, the $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation turns into an unbroken outer automorphism which does not warrant physical $\mathcal{CP}$ conservation

▸ details

Modular
flavor
symmetries

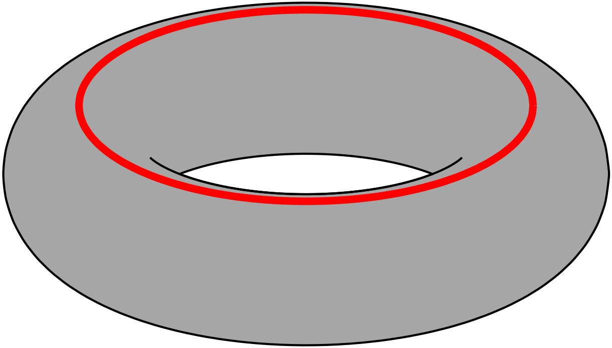
Tori

- ☞ torus=donut



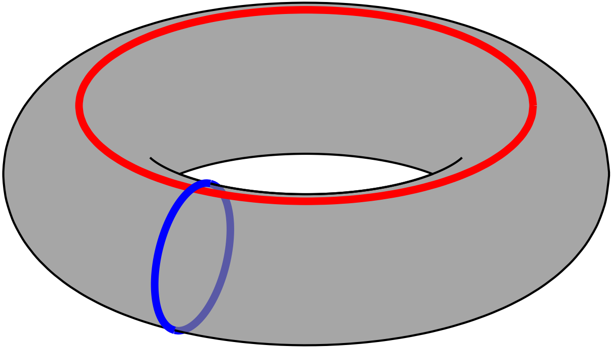
Tori

- ☞ torus=donut
- ☞ two cycles



Tori

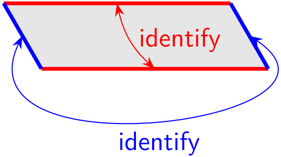
- ☞ torus=donut
- ☞ two cycles



Tori

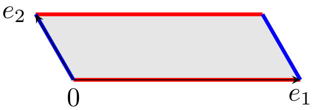
- ☞ torus can be thought of as a parallelogram (which emerges by cutting the torus open along the red and blue cycles)

Tori



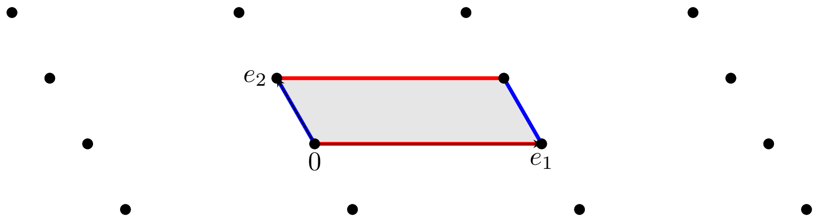
- ☞ opposite edges get identified

Tori



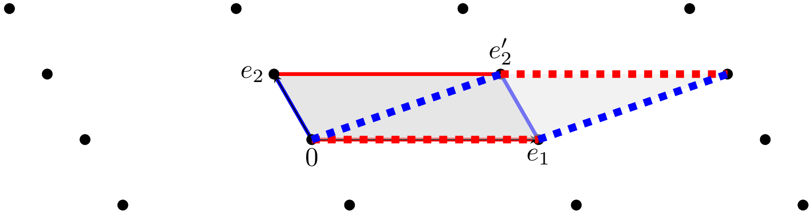
- ☞ edges define basis vectors of a lattice

Tori



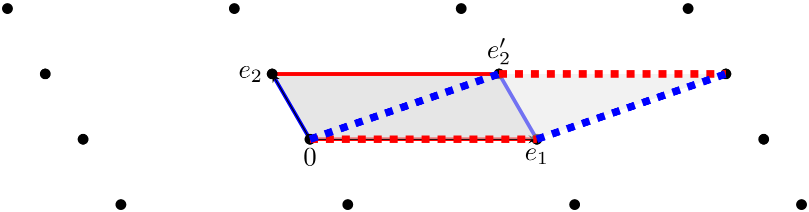
☞ torus is $\mathbb{T}^2 = \mathbb{R}^2/\mathbb{Z}^2$: two points in the plane get identified if they differ by a lattice translation

Tori



☞ fundamental domain is not unique

Tori

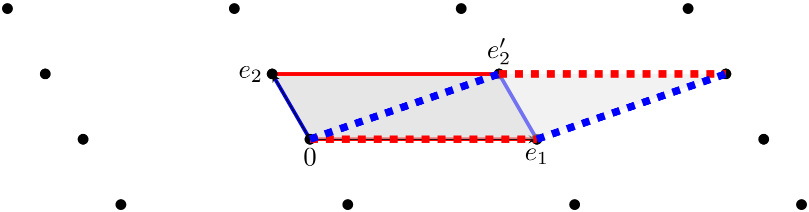


- fundamental domain is not unique
- we can build linear combinations of the basis vectors

$$\begin{pmatrix} e_2 \\ e_1 \end{pmatrix} \xrightarrow{\gamma} \begin{pmatrix} e_2' \\ e_1' \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} e_2 \\ e_1 \end{pmatrix} =: \gamma \begin{pmatrix} e_2 \\ e_1 \end{pmatrix}$$

$a, b, c, d \in \mathbb{Z}$

Tori



- fundamental domain is not unique
- we can build linear combinations of the basis vectors

$$\begin{pmatrix} e_2 \\ e_1 \end{pmatrix} \overset{\gamma}{\mapsto} \begin{pmatrix} e_2' \\ e_1' \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} e_2 \\ e_1 \end{pmatrix} =: \gamma \begin{pmatrix} e_2 \\ e_1 \end{pmatrix}$$

- volume of fundamental domain stays the same $\Leftrightarrow \det\gamma = 1 \curvearrowright$ $\gamma \in \mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})$ (there is a superfluous sign, so $\gamma \in \Gamma = \mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})/\mathbb{Z}_2$)

$\mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})$

- ☞ two basic transformations

$$T \;:\; e_2 \mapsto e_2' = e_2 + e_1 \qquad \curvearrowright \gamma = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} =: T$$

$$S \;:\; e_1 \mapsto e_1' = e_2 \quad \text{and} \quad e_2 \mapsto e_2' = -e_1 \quad \curvearrowright \gamma = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} =: S$$

$\mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})$

- ☞ two basic transformations

$$T \;:\; e_2 \mapsto e_2' = e_2 + e_1 \qquad \curvearrowright \gamma = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} =: T$$

$$S \;:\; e_1 \mapsto e_1' = e_2 \quad \text{and} \quad e_2 \mapsto e_2' = -e_1 \qquad \curvearrowright \gamma = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} =: S$$

- ☞ S and T generate $\mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})$ and

$$S^2 \;=\; (S\,T)^3 \;=\; \mathbb{1}$$

$\mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})$ and modular flavor symmetries

☞ two basic transformations

$$T \;:\; e_2 \mapsto e_2' = e_2 + e_1 \qquad \curvearrowright \gamma = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} =: T$$

$$S \;:\; e_1 \mapsto e_1' = e_2 \quad \text{and} \quad e_2 \mapsto e_2' = -e_1 \qquad \curvearrowright \gamma = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} =: S$$

☞ S and T generate $\mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})$ and

$$S^2 \;=\; (S\,T)^3 \;=\; \mathbb{1}$$

Modular flavor symmetries:

identify finite groups with generators satisfying

$$S^2 \;=\; (S\,T)^3 \;=\; \mathbb{1}$$

and additional relations

Modular flavor symmetries

- ☞ finite subgroups $\Gamma_N := \Gamma/\Gamma(N)$ where

$$\Gamma(N) = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})/\mathbb{Z}_2 \;;\; \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \mod N \right\}$$

level

Modular flavor symmetries

☞ finite subgroups $\Gamma_N := \Gamma/\Gamma(N)$ where

$$\Gamma(N) = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})/\mathbb{Z}_2 \; ; \; \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \mod N \right\}$$

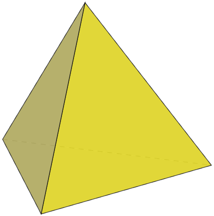
☞ e.g. $\Gamma_3 \simeq A_4$ (symmetry of tetrahedron)

Modular flavor symmetries

- ☞ finite subgroups $\Gamma_N := \Gamma/\Gamma(N)$ where

$$\Gamma(N) = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})/\mathbb{Z}_2 \; ; \; \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \mod N \right\}$$

- ☞ e.g. $\Gamma_3 \simeq A_4$ (symmetry of tetrahedron)

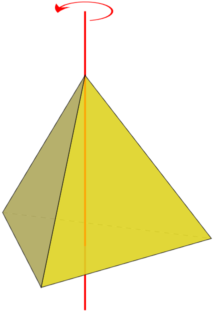


Modular flavor symmetries

☞ finite subgroups $\Gamma_N := \Gamma/\Gamma(N)$ where

$$\Gamma(N)=\left\{\begin{pmatrix}a & b\\ c & d\end{pmatrix}\in\mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})/\mathbb{Z}_2\;;\;\begin{pmatrix}a & b\\ c & d\end{pmatrix}=\begin{pmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 1\end{pmatrix}\mod N\right\}$$

☞ e.g. $\Gamma_3\simeq A_4$ (symmetry of tetrahedron)

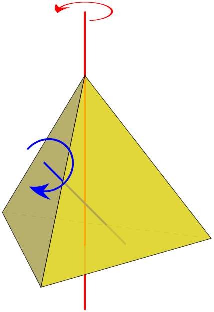


Modular flavor symmetries

- finite subgroups $\Gamma_N := \Gamma/\Gamma(N)$ where

$$\Gamma(N) = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})/\mathbb{Z}_2 \; ; \; \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \mod N \right\}$$

- e.g. $\Gamma_3 \simeq A_4$ (symmetry of tetrahedron)

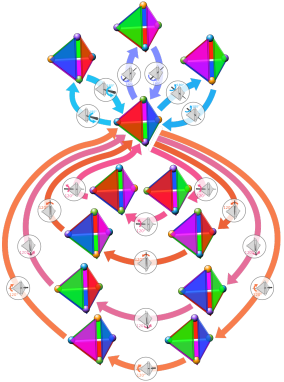


Modular flavor symmetries

- finite subgroups $\Gamma_N := \Gamma/\Gamma(N)$ where

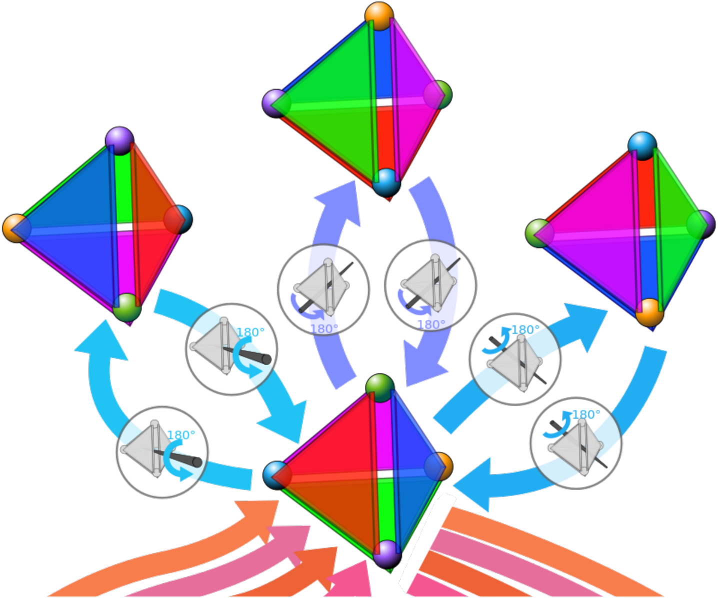
$$\Gamma(N) = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})/\mathbb{Z}_2 \; ; \; \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \mod N \right\}$$

- e.g. $\Gamma_3 \simeq A_4$ (symmetry of tetrahedron)

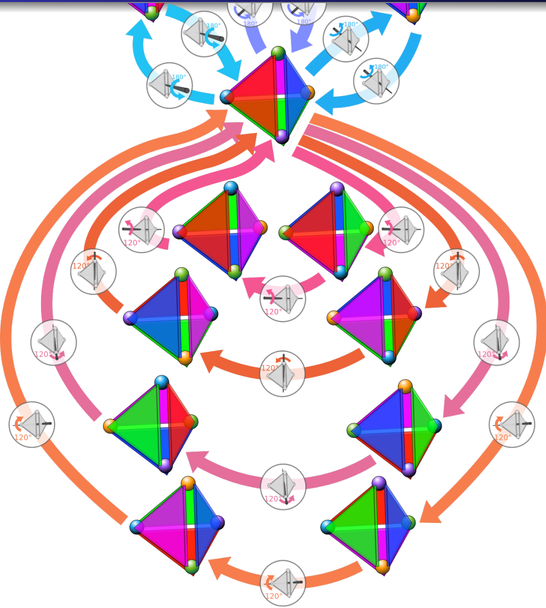


www.wikipedia.org

Modular flavor symmetries



Modular flavor symmetries



Modular flavor symmetries

- ☞ finite subgroups $\Gamma_N := \Gamma/\Gamma(N)$ where

$$\Gamma(N) = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})/\mathbb{Z}_2 \; ; \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \mod N \right\}$$

- ☞ e.g. $\Gamma_3 \simeq A_4$ (symmetry of tetrahedron)
- ☞ complex coordinates: $\mathbb{R}^2 \simeq \mathbb{C}$

Modular flavor symmetries

- ☞ finite subgroups $\Gamma_N := \Gamma/\Gamma(N)$ where

$$\Gamma(N) = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})/\mathbb{Z}_2 \; ; \; \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \mod N \right\}$$

- ☞ e.g. $\Gamma_3 \simeq A_4$ (symmetry of tetrahedron)
- ☞ complex coordinates: $\mathbb{R}^2 \simeq \mathbb{C}$
- ➥ modular transformations in complex coordinates

$$\tau \xmapsto{S} \frac{-1}{\tau} \quad \text{and} \quad \tau \xmapsto{T} \tau + 1$$

Modular forms

- traditional modular forms

$$f(\gamma\tau) = (c\tau + d)^{-k} f(\tau)$$

$$\gamma = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})/\mathbb{Z}_2$$

Modular forms

☞ traditional modular forms

$$f(\gamma\tau) = (c\tau + d)^{-k} f(\tau)$$

$k \in \mathbb{Q}$ modular weight

Modular forms & modular flavor symmetries

- ☞ traditional modular forms

$$f(\gamma\tau) = (c\tau + d)^{-k} f(\tau)$$

- ☞ modular forms of level N

$$f_i(\gamma\tau) = (c\tau + d)^{-k} \left[\rho_N(\gamma)\right]_{ij} f_j(\tau)$$

representation matrix of Γ_N

Modular forms & modular flavor symmetries

- ☞ traditional modular forms

$$f(\gamma\tau) = (c\tau + d)^{-k} f(\tau)$$

- ☞ modular forms of level N

$$f_i(\gamma\tau) = (c\tau + d)^{-k} \left[\rho_N(\gamma)\right]_{ij} f_j(\tau)$$

Feruglio [2017]

Modular flavor symmetries:

What if Yukawa couplings are modular forms?

An explicit example

Feruglio [2017]

☞ lepton sector of the (supersymmetric) standard model

	(E_1^c, E_2^c, E_3^c)	L	H_d	H_u	φ
$\mathrm{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_Y$	$\mathbf{1}_1$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{1/2}$	$\mathbf{1}_0$
Γ_3	$(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1'}, \mathbf{1''})$	$\mathbf{3}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{3}$
k	$(k_{E_1}, k_{E_2}, k_{E_3})$	k_L	k_d	k_u	k_φ

An explicit example

flavon

Feruglio [2017]

- lepton sector of the (supersymmetric) standard model

	(E_1^c, E_2^c, E_3^c)	L	H_d	H_u	φ
$\mathrm{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_Y$	$\mathbf{1}_1$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{1/2}$	$\mathbf{1}_0$
Γ_3	$(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1'}, \mathbf{1''})$	$\mathbf{3}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{3}$
k	$(k_{E_1}, k_{E_2}, k_{E_3})$	k_L	k_d	k_u	k_φ

- charged fermion masses are obtained by adjusting three parameters

An explicit example

Feruglio [2017]

- lepton sector of the (supersymmetric) standard model

	(E_1^c, E_2^c, E_3^c)	L	H_d	H_u	φ
$\mathrm{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_Y$	$\mathbf{1}_1$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{1/2}$	$\mathbf{1}_0$
Γ_3	$(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1}', \mathbf{1}'')$	$\mathbf{3}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{3}$
k	$(k_{E_1}, k_{E_2}, k_{E_3})$	k_L	k_d	k_u	k_φ

- charged fermion masses are obtained by adjusting three parameters
- Weinberg operator: $\mathscr{W}_\nu \;=\; \dfrac{1}{\Lambda}\left[(H_u \cdot L)\; Y\; (H_u \cdot L)\right]_{\mathbf{1}}$

$Y = (Y_1, Y_2, Y_3)^T$ w/ Y_i modular functions (unique)

An explicit example

Feruglio [2017]

- lepton sector of the (supersymmetric) standard model

	(E_1^c, E_2^c, E_3^c)	L	H_d	H_u	φ
$\mathrm{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_Y$	$\mathbf{1}_1$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{1/2}$	$\mathbf{1}_0$
Γ_3	$(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1}', \mathbf{1}'')$	$\mathbf{3}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{3}$
k	$(k_{E_1}, k_{E_2}, k_{E_3})$	k_L	k_d	k_u	k_φ

- charged fermion masses are obtained by adjusting three parameters
- Weinberg operator: $\mathscr{W}_\nu = \frac{1}{\Lambda} \left[(H_u \cdot L)\ Y\ (H_u \cdot L)\right]_\mathbf{1}$
- Kähler potential of charged leptons: $K_L = (-\mathrm{i}\,\tau + \mathrm{i}\,\overline{\tau})^{-1} \left(\overline{L}\,L\right)_\mathbf{1}$

An explicit example

Feruglio [2017]

- lepton sector of the (supersymmetric) standard model

	(E_1^c, E_2^c, E_3^c)	L	H_d	H_u	φ
$\mathrm{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L}\times\mathrm{U}(1)_Y$	$\mathbf{1}_1$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{1/2}$	$\mathbf{1}_0$
Γ_3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1}',\mathbf{1}'')$	$\mathbf{3}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{3}$
k	$(k_{E_1},k_{E_2},k_{E_3})$	k_L	k_d	k_u	k_φ

- charged fermion masses are obtained by adjusting three parameters
- Weinberg operator: $\mathscr{W}_\nu \;=\; \dfrac{1}{\Lambda}\left[(H_u\cdot L)\;Y\;(H_u\cdot L)\right]_{\mathbf{1}}$
- Kähler potential of charged leptons: $K_L \;=\; (-\mathrm{i}\,\tau+\mathrm{i}\,\overline{\tau})^{-1}\,\left(\overline{L}\,L\right)_{\mathbf{1}}$
- neutrino mass in traditional A_4 models

$$m_\nu \;=\; \frac{v_u^2}{\Lambda}\begin{pmatrix}2a & -c & -b\\ -c & 2b & -a\\ -b & -a & 2c\end{pmatrix}\qquad\text{(old)}$$

An explicit example

Feruglio [2017]

- lepton sector of the (supersymmetric) standard model

	(E_1^c, E_2^c, E_3^c)	L	H_d	H_u	φ
$\mathrm{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_Y$	$\mathbf{1}_1$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{1/2}$	$\mathbf{1}_0$
Γ_3	$(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1}', \mathbf{1}'')$	$\mathbf{3}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{3}$
k	$(k_{E_1}, k_{E_2}, k_{E_3})$	k_L	k_d	k_u	k_φ

- charged fermion masses are obtained by adjusting three parameters
- Weinberg operator: $\mathscr{W}_\nu = \frac{1}{\Lambda} \left[(H_u \cdot L)\ Y\ (H_u \cdot L)\right]_{\mathbf{1}}$
- Kähler potential of charged leptons: $K_L = (-\mathrm{i}\,\tau + \mathrm{i}\,\overline{\tau})^{-1} \left(\overline{L}\, L\right)_{\mathbf{1}}$
- neutrino mass in "modular" A_4 models

$$m_\nu = \frac{v_u^2}{\Lambda} \begin{pmatrix} 2Y_1(\tau) & -Y_3(\tau) & -Y_2(\tau) \\ -Y_3(\tau) & 2Y_2(\tau) & -Y_1(\tau) \\ -Y_2(\tau) & -Y_1(\tau) & 2Y_3(\tau) \end{pmatrix}$$

An explicit example

Feruglio [2017]

- lepton sector of the (supersymmetric) standard model

	(E_1^c, E_2^c, E_3^c)	L	H_d	H_u	φ
$\mathrm{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_Y$	$\mathbf{1}_1$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{-1/2}$	$\mathbf{2}_{1/2}$	$\mathbf{1}_0$
Γ_3	$(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1'}, \mathbf{1''})$	$\mathbf{3}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{1}$	$\mathbf{3}$
k	$(k_{E_1}, k_{E_2}, k_{E_3})$	k_L	k_d	k_u	k_φ

- charged fermion masses are obtained by adjusting three parameters
- Weinberg operator: $\mathscr{W}_\nu = \dfrac{1}{\Lambda}\left[(H_u \cdot L)\ Y\ (H_u \cdot L)\right]_{\mathbf{1}}$
- Kähler potential of charged leptons: $K_L = (-\mathrm{i}\,\tau + \mathrm{i}\,\overline{\tau})^{-1}\ \left(\overline{L}\,L\right)_{\mathbf{1}}$
- neutrino mass in "modular" A_4 models

$$m_\nu = \frac{v_u^2}{\Lambda}\begin{pmatrix} 2Y_1(\tau) & -Y_3(\tau) & -Y_2(\tau) \\ -Y_3(\tau) & 2Y_2(\tau) & -Y_1(\tau) \\ -Y_2(\tau) & -Y_1(\tau) & 2Y_3(\tau) \end{pmatrix}$$

- 3 free parameters Λ, $\mathrm{Re}\,\tau$ and $\mathrm{Im}\,\tau$ $\curvearrowright$ 9 predictions: three mass eigenvalues, three mixing angles and three phases

Too good to be true?

- ☞ 3 free parameters Λ, $\mathrm{Re}\,\tau$ and $\mathrm{Im}\,\tau$ $\curvearrowright$ 9 predictions: three mass eigenvalues, three mixing angles and three phases

Too good to be true?

- ☞ 3 free parameters Λ, $\operatorname{Re}\tau$ and $\operatorname{Im}\tau$ $\curvearrowright$ 9 predictions: three mass eigenvalues, three mixing angles and three phases
- ☞ Why is this a big deal?
  - we know two Δm^2 and three angles so it is nontrivial that this works.
  - predictions of the absolute mass scale, the Dirac phase and the Majorana phases.

Too good to be true ☹

- ☞ 3 free parameters Λ, $\operatorname{Re}\tau$ and $\operatorname{Im}\tau$ $\curvearrowright$ 9 predictions: three mass eigenvalues, three mixing angles and three phases
- ☞ Why is this a big deal?
  - we know two Δm^2 and three angles so it is nontrivial that this works.
  - predictions of the absolute mass scale, the Dirac phase and the Majorana phases.
- ☞ Increase in predictivity because multi–component flavons got replaced by τ, which has only two degrees of freedom

Too good to be true ☹

- ☞ 3 free parameters Λ, $\operatorname{Re}\tau$ and $\operatorname{Im}\tau \curvearrowright$ 9 predictions: three mass eigenvalues, three mixing angles and three phases
- ☞ Why is this a big deal?
  - we know two Δm^2 and three angles so it is nontrivial that this works.
  - predictions of the absolute mass scale, the Dirac phase and the Majorana phases.
- ☞ Increase in predictivity because multi–component flavons got replaced by τ, which has only two degrees of freedom
- ☞ **However**: Kähler potential not fixed by symmetries

Chen, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2020]

Too good to be true ☹

- 3 free parameters Λ, $\mathrm{Re}\,\tau$ and $\mathrm{Im}\,\tau$ $\curvearrowright$ 9 predictions: three mass eigenvalues, three mixing angles and three phases
- Why is this a big deal?
  - we know two Δm^2 and three angles so it is nontrivial that this works.
  - predictions of the absolute mass scale, the Dirac phase and the Majorana phases.
- Increase in predictivity because multi–component flavons got replaced by τ, which has only two degrees of freedom
- **However**: Kähler potential not fixed by symmetries

Chen, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2020]

➥ many more parameters

Problem with kinetic terms

Chen, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2020]

☞ EFT expansion of the Kähler potential

$$K \;=\; \alpha_0\,(-\mathrm{i}\,\tau+\mathrm{i}\,\overline{\tau})^{-1}\,\left(\overline{L}\,L\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+\sum_{k=1}^{7}\alpha_k\,(-\mathrm{i}\,\tau+\mathrm{i}\,\overline{\tau})\,\left(Y\,L\,\overline{Y}\,\overline{L}\right)_{\mathbf{1},\,k}+\dots$$

canonical (up to overall factor)

Problem with kinetic terms

Chen, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2020]

☞ EFT expansion of the Kähler potential

$$K \;=\; \alpha_0\,\left(-\mathrm{i}\,\tau+\mathrm{i}\,\overline{\tau}\right)^{-1}\,\left(\overline{L}\,L\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+\sum_{k=1}^{7}\alpha_k\left(-\mathrm{i}\,\tau+\mathrm{i}\,\overline{\tau}\right)\,\left(Y\,L\,\overline{Y}\,\overline{L}\right)_{\mathbf{1},\,k}+\dots$$

extra terms on the same footing

Problem with kinetic terms

Chen, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2020]

- ☞ EFT expansion of the Kähler potential

$$K = \alpha_0 \left(-\mathrm{i}\,\tau + \mathrm{i}\,\overline{\tau}\right)^{-1} \left(\overline{L}\,L\right)_{\mathbf{1}} + \sum_{k=1}^{7} \alpha_k \left(-\mathrm{i}\,\tau + \mathrm{i}\,\overline{\tau}\right) \left(Y\,L\,\overline{Y}\,\overline{L}\right)_{\mathbf{1},\,k} + \dots$$

- ☞ Since modular flavor symmetries are nonlinearly realized there is no control over the Kähler potential

Problem with kinetic terms

Chen, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2020]

- ☞ EFT expansion of the Kähler potential

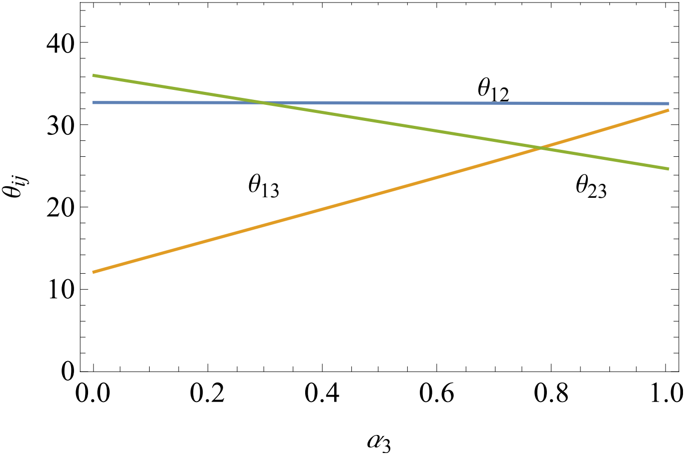
$$K \;=\; \alpha_0 \, (-\mathsf{i}\,\tau + \mathsf{i}\,\overline{\tau})^{-1} \, \left(\overline{L}\,L\right)_{\mathbf{1}} + \sum_{k=1}^{7} \alpha_k \, (-\mathsf{i}\,\tau + \mathsf{i}\,\overline{\tau}) \, \left(Y\,L\,\overline{Y}\,\overline{L}\right)_{\mathbf{1},\,k} + \dots$$

- ☞ Since modular flavor symmetries are nonlinearly realized there is no control over the Kähler potential
- ➥ More parameters than predictions in bottom–up approach

Example of corrections in modular A_4 model

Chen, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2020]

- ☞ E.g. sensitivity to the α_3 coefficient



Modular flavor symmetries from strings

- ☞ In order to make reliable predictions we need more ingredients

Modular flavor symmetries from strings

- ☞ In order to make reliable predictions we need more ingredients
- ☞ Ultimately we want to embed these models in a more complete framework anyway

Modular flavor symmetries from strings

- ☞ In order to make reliable predictions we need more ingredients
- ☞ Ultimately we want to embed these models in a more complete framework anyway
- ☞ Powerful tool: eclectic flavor symmetries

Nilles, Ramos–Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2021], Baur, Kade, Nilles, Ramos-Sanchez & Vaudrevange [2021]
Nilles, Ramos–Sánchez, & Vaudrevange [2020c], Nilles, Ramos-Sanchez & Vaudrevange [2020a]
Nilles, Ramos-Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2020b]

Modular flavor symmetries from strings

☞ In order to make reliable predictions we need more ingredients

☞ Ultimately we want to embed these models in a more complete framework anyway

☞ Powerful tool: eclectic flavor symmetries

Nilles, Ramos–Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2021], Baur, Kade, Nilles, Ramos-Sanchez & Vaudrevange [2021]
Nilles, Ramos–Sánchez, & Vaudrevange [2020c], Nilles, Ramos-Sanchez & Vaudrevange [2020a]
Nilles, Ramos-Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2020b]

☞ This talk: focus on a simple enough field theory model that is "stringy enough"

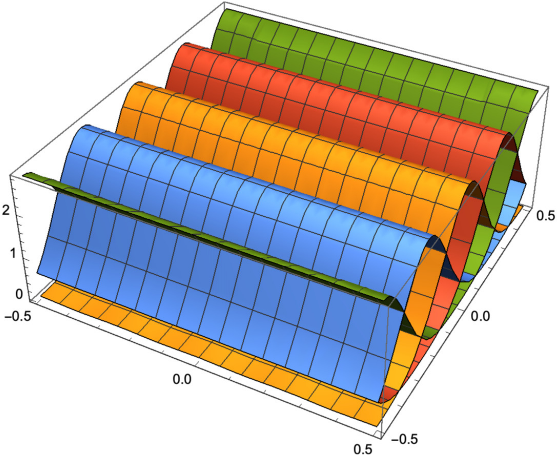
Metaplectic flavor symmetries

Magnetized tori

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- ☞ torus with magnetic flux carries chiral zero modes

$$\psi^{j,M}(z,\tau,\zeta)=\mathcal{N}\,\mathrm{e}^{\pi\,\mathrm{i}\,M\,(z+\zeta)\,\frac{\mathrm{Im}(z+\zeta)}{\mathrm{Im}\,\tau}}\,\vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{j}{M}\\0\end{bmatrix}\bigl(M\,(z+\zeta),M\,\tau\bigr)$$



Magnetized tori

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

☞ torus with magnetic flux carries chiral zero modes

$$\psi^{j,M}(z,\tau,\zeta) = \mathcal{N}\,\mathrm{e}^{\pi\,\mathrm{i}\,M\,(z+\zeta)\,\frac{\mathrm{Im}(z+\zeta)}{\mathrm{Im}\,\tau}}\,\vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{j}{M}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}\bigl(M\,(z+\zeta), M\,\tau\bigr)$$

flux parameter $\curvearrowright$ # of zero modes

Magnetized tori

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

☞ torus with magnetic flux carries chiral zero modes

$$\psi^{j,M}(z,\tau,\zeta) = \mathcal{N}\,\mathrm{e}^{\pi\,\mathsf{i}\,M\,(z+\zeta)\,\frac{\mathrm{Im}(z+\zeta)}{\mathrm{Im}\,\tau}}\,\vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{j}{M}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}\bigl(M\,(z+\zeta), M\,\tau\bigr)$$

“Wilson line”

Magnetized tori

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- ☞ torus with magnetic flux carries chiral zero modes

$$\psi^{j,M}(z,\tau,\zeta) = \mathcal{N}\, \mathrm{e}^{\pi\,\mathrm{i}\,M\,(z+\zeta)\,\frac{\mathrm{Im}(z+\zeta)}{\mathrm{Im}\,\tau}}\,\vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{j}{M}\\0\end{bmatrix}\bigl(M\,(z+\zeta), M\,\tau\bigr)$$

Jacobi ϑ–function

Magnetized tori

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- torus with magnetic flux carries chiral zero modes

$$\psi^{j,M}(z,\tau,\zeta) = \mathcal{N}\,\mathrm{e}^{\pi\,\mathsf{i}\,M\,(z+\zeta)\,\frac{\mathrm{Im}(z+\zeta)}{\mathrm{Im}\,\tau}}\,\vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{j}{M}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}\bigl(M\,(z+\zeta), M\,\tau\bigr)$$

- normalization

$$\mathcal{N} = \left(\frac{2M\;\mathrm{Im}\,\tau}{\mathcal{A}^2}\right)^{1/4}$$

area of torus
$\mathcal{A} = (2\pi R)^2\,\mathrm{Im}\,\tau$

Flux

- ☞ Flux in U(N) gauge theory w/ $N = N_a + N_b + N_c$

$$F_{z\bar{z}} = \frac{\pi \mathrm{i}}{\operatorname{Im}\tau}\begin{pmatrix} \frac{m_a}{N_a}\mathbb{1}_{N_a\times N_a} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{m_b}{N_b}\mathbb{1}_{N_b\times N_b} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{m_c}{N_c}\mathbb{1}_{N_c\times N_c} \end{pmatrix}$$

Flux

- ☞ Flux in U(N) gauge theory w/ $N = N_a + N_b + N_c$

$$F_{z\bar{z}} = \frac{\pi\mathrm{i}}{\operatorname{Im}\tau}\begin{pmatrix}\frac{m_a}{N_a}\mathbb{1}_{N_a\times N_a} & 0 & 0\\ 0 & \frac{m_b}{N_b}\mathbb{1}_{N_b\times N_b} & 0\\ 0 & 0 & \frac{m_c}{N_c}\mathbb{1}_{N_c\times N_c}\end{pmatrix}$$

- ☞ Assumption: $s_\alpha = \frac{m_\alpha}{N_\alpha} \in \mathbb{Z}$

Flux

- ☞ Flux in U(N) gauge theory w/ $N = N_a + N_b + N_c$

$$F_{z\bar{z}} = \frac{\pi\mathsf{i}}{\operatorname{Im}\tau}\begin{pmatrix} \frac{m_a}{N_a}\mathbb{1}_{N_a\times N_a} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{m_b}{N_b}\mathbb{1}_{N_b\times N_b} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{m_c}{N_c}\mathbb{1}_{N_c\times N_c} \end{pmatrix}$$

- ☞ Assumption: $s_\alpha = \frac{m_\alpha}{N_\alpha} \in \mathbb{Z}$
- ☞ Differences between fluxes: $\mathcal{I}_{\alpha\beta} = s_\alpha - s_\beta$

Flux

- ☞ Flux in U(N) gauge theory w/ $N = N_a + N_b + N_c$

$$F_{z\bar{z}} = \frac{\pi \mathrm{i}}{\operatorname{Im}\tau} \begin{pmatrix} \frac{m_a}{N_a}\mathbb{1}_{N_a\times N_a} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{m_b}{N_b}\mathbb{1}_{N_b\times N_b} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{m_c}{N_c}\mathbb{1}_{N_c\times N_c} \end{pmatrix}$$

- ☞ Assumption: $s_\alpha = \frac{m_\alpha}{N_\alpha} \in \mathbb{Z}$
- ☞ Differences between fluxes: $\mathcal{I}_{\alpha\beta} = s_\alpha - s_\beta$
- ☞ “Sum rule”

$$\mathcal{I}_{ab} + \mathcal{I}_{bc} + \mathcal{I}_{ca} = 0$$

Yukawa couplings

- ☞ Yukawa couplings are given by overlap integrals

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = g\,\sigma_{abc} \int\limits_{\mathbb{T}^2} \mathrm{d}^2z\,\psi^{i,\mathcal{I}_{ab}}(z,\tau,\zeta_{ab})\,\psi^{j,\mathcal{I}_{ca}}(z,\tau,\zeta_{ca})\,\left(\psi^{k,\mathcal{I}_{cb}}(z,\tau,\zeta_{cb})\right)^*$$

gauge coupling

sign

Yukawa couplings

- Yukawa couplings are given by overlap integrals

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = g\,\sigma_{abc} \int\limits_{\mathbb{T}^2} \mathrm{d}^2 z\,\psi^{i,\mathcal{I}_{ab}}(z,\tau,\zeta_{ab})\,\psi^{j,\mathcal{I}_{ca}}(z,\tau,\zeta_{ca})\,\left(\psi^{k,\mathcal{I}_{cb}}(z,\tau,\zeta_{cb})\right)^*$$

“Wilson lines”

Yukawa couplings

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- ☞ Yukawa couplings be expressed as a sum of ϑ–functions

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\,\mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}} \sum_{m\in\mathbb{Z}_{\mathcal{I}_{bc}}} \delta_{k,i+j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\,m} \cdot \vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{\mathcal{I}_{ca}i-\mathcal{I}_{ab}j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{ca}m}{-\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau\,|\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}|)$$

$$\mathcal{N}_{abc} = g\,\sigma_{abc}\,\left(\frac{2\,\mathrm{Im}\,\tau}{\mathcal{A}^2}\right)^{1/4}\left|\frac{\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{ca}}{\mathcal{I}_{bc}}\right|^{1/4}$$

Yukawa couplings

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

☞ Yukawa couplings be expressed as a sum of ϑ–functions

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\, \mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}} \sum_{m\in\mathbb{Z}_{\mathcal{I}_{bc}}} \delta_{k,i+j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\, m}$$

$$\cdot\, \vartheta \begin{bmatrix} \frac{\mathcal{I}_{ca} i - \mathcal{I}_{ab} j + \mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{ca} m}{-\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}} \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \left(\widetilde{\zeta}, \tau\, |\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}|\right)$$

"collective" Wilson line

$$\widetilde{\zeta} := -\mathcal{I}_{ab}\,\mathcal{I}_{ca}\,(\zeta_{ca} - \zeta_{ab}) = d^{\alpha\beta\gamma}\, s_\alpha\, \zeta_\alpha\, \mathcal{I}_{\beta\gamma}$$

$$\text{w/ } d^{\alpha\beta\gamma} = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } \{\alpha,\beta,\gamma\} \text{ is even perm. of } \{1,2,3\} \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

Yukawa couplings

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- ☞ Yukawa couplings be expressed as a sum of ϑ–functions

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\,\mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}} \sum_{m\in\mathbb{Z}_{\mathcal{I}_{bc}}} \delta_{k,i+j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\,m} \cdot \vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{\mathcal{I}_{ca}i-\mathcal{I}_{ab}j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{ca}m}{-\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau\,|\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}|)$$

$$\begin{aligned}\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2} &:= \frac{\pi\mathrm{i}}{\mathrm{Im}\,\tau}\left(\mathcal{I}_{ab}\,\zeta_{ab}\;\mathrm{Im}\,\zeta_{ab}+\mathcal{I}_{bc}\,\zeta_{bc}\;\mathrm{Im}\,\zeta_{bc}+\mathcal{I}_{ca}\,\zeta_{ca}\;\mathrm{Im}\,\zeta_{ca}\right)\\ &= \frac{\pi\mathrm{i}}{\mathrm{Im}\,\tau}\,|\mathcal{I}_{ab}\,\mathcal{I}_{bc}\,\mathcal{I}_{ab}|^{-1}\,\frac{\widetilde{\zeta}\;\mathrm{Im}\,\widetilde{\zeta}}{\mathrm{Im}\,\tau}\end{aligned}$$

Yukawa couplings

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

☞ Yukawa couplings be expressed as a sum of ϑ–functions

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\, \mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}} \sum_{m\in\mathbb{Z}_{\mathcal{I}_{bc}}} \delta_{k,i+j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\, m} \cdot \vartheta \begin{bmatrix} \frac{\mathcal{I}_{ca} i-\mathcal{I}_{ab} j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{ca} m}{-\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}} \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \left(\widetilde{\zeta}, \tau\, |\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}|\right)$$

☞ Yukawa couplings also describe intersecting brane models

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

Yukawa couplings

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- ☞ Yukawa couplings be expressed as a sum of ϑ–functions

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\,\mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}} \sum_{m\in\mathbb{Z}_{\mathcal{I}_{bc}}} \delta_{k,i+j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\,m} \cdot \vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{\mathcal{I}_{ca}i-\mathcal{I}_{ab}j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{ca}m}{-\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}\left(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau\,|\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}|\right)$$

- ☞ Yukawa couplings also describe intersecting brane models

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- ☞ Also related to couplings on heterotic orbifolds

Abel & Owen [2004]

Yukawa couplings

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- Yukawa couplings be expressed as a sum of ϑ–functions

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\,\mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}} \sum_{m\in\mathbb{Z}_{\mathcal{I}_{bc}}} \delta_{k,i+j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\,m}$$

$$\cdot\,\vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{\mathcal{I}_{ca}i-\mathcal{I}_{ab}j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{ca}m}{-\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}\left(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau\,|\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}|\right)$$

- Yukawa couplings also describe intersecting brane models

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- Also related to couplings on heterotic orbifolds

Abel & Owen [2004]

- Obviously no sum for $\mathcal{I}_{bc}=1$

Yukawa couplings

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- ☞ Yukawa couplings be expressed as a sum of ϑ–functions

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)=\mathcal{N}_{abc}\,\mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}}\sum_{m\in\mathbb{Z}_{\mathcal{I}_{bc}}}\delta_{k,i+j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\,m}\cdot\vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{\mathcal{I}_{ca}i-\mathcal{I}_{ab}j+\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{ca}m}{-\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}}\\0\end{bmatrix}\left(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau\,|\mathcal{I}_{ab}\mathcal{I}_{bc}\mathcal{I}_{ca}|\right)$$

- ☞ Yukawa couplings also describe intersecting brane models

Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

- ☞ Also related to couplings on heterotic orbifolds

Abel & Owen [2004]

- ☞ Obviously no sum for $\mathcal{I}_{bc}=1$
- ☞ There might still be a sum for $\gcd(\mathcal{I}_{ab},\mathcal{I}_{ca},\mathcal{I}_{bc})=1$

Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

Yukawa couplings for general flux parameters

Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

- Using elementary number theory one can reduce the Yukawa coupling to a single ϑ–function

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\,\mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}}\,\Delta^{(d)}_{i+j,k} \cdot \vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\,i-\mathcal{I}'_{ab}\,j+\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\,(\mathcal{I}'_{ab})^{\phi\left(|\mathcal{I}'_{bc}|\right)}\,(k-i-j)}{\lambda}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}\left(\frac{\widetilde{\zeta}}{d},\lambda\,\tau\right)$$

Euler ϕ–function

$\lambda = \mathrm{lcm}\bigl(|\mathcal{I}_{ab}|,|\mathcal{I}_{ca}|,|\mathcal{I}_{bc}|\bigr)$

Yukawa couplings for general flux parameters

Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

- Using elementary number theory one can reduce the Yukawa coupling to a single ϑ–function

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\,\mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}}\,\Delta^{(d)}_{i+j,k} \cdot \vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\,i-\mathcal{I}'_{ab}\,j+\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\,\left(\mathcal{I}'_{ab}\right)^{\phi\left(|\mathcal{I}'_{bc}|\right)}\,(k-i-j)}{\lambda}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}\left(\frac{\widetilde{\zeta}}{d},\lambda\,\tau\right)$$

$$\Delta^{(d)}_{i+j,k} := \begin{cases} 1\,, & \text{if } i+j=k \mod d\\ 0\,, & \text{otherwise}\end{cases}$$

Yukawa couplings for general flux parameters

Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

- Using elementary number theory one can reduce the Yukawa coupling to a single ϑ–function

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\,\mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}}\,\Delta^{(d)}_{i+j,k} \cdot \vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\,i-\mathcal{I}'_{ab}\,j+\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\,\left(\mathcal{I}'_{ab}\right)^{\phi\left(|\mathcal{I}'_{bc}|\right)}\,(k-i-j)}{\lambda}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}\left(\frac{\widetilde{\zeta}}{d},\lambda\,\tau\right)$$

$$\mathcal{I}'_{ij} = \mathcal{I}_{ij}/d$$

Yukawa couplings for general flux parameters

Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

- Using elementary number theory one can reduce the Yukawa coupling to a single ϑ–function

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\,\mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}}\,\Delta^{(d)}_{i+j,k} \cdot \vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\,i-\mathcal{I}'_{ab}\,j+\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\,\left(\mathcal{I}'_{ab}\right)^{\phi\left(|\mathcal{I}'_{bc}|\right)}\,(k-i-j)}{\lambda}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}\left(\frac{\widetilde{\zeta}}{d},\lambda\,\tau\right)$$

- Only $\mathrm{lcm}\big(|\mathcal{I}_{ab}|,|\mathcal{I}_{ca}|,|\mathcal{I}_{bc}|\big)$ independent coupling, e.g. a model with $\big(\mathcal{I}_{ab},\mathcal{I}_{ca},\mathcal{I}_{bc}\big)=(1,2,-3)$ has as many independent couplings as a model with $\big(\mathcal{I}_{ab},\mathcal{I}_{ca},\mathcal{I}_{bc}\big)=(3,3,-6)$

Yukawa couplings for general flux parameters

Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

☞ Using elementary number theory one can reduce the Yukawa coupling to a single ϑ–function

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\,\mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}}\,\Delta^{(d)}_{i+j,k} \cdot \vartheta\begin{bmatrix}\frac{\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\,i-\mathcal{I}'_{ab}\,j+\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\,(\mathcal{I}'_{ab})^{\phi\left(|\mathcal{I}'_{bc}|\right)}\,(k-i-j)}{\lambda}\\ 0\end{bmatrix}\left(\frac{\widetilde{\zeta}}{d},\lambda\,\tau\right)$$

➥ Only $\mathrm{lcm}\big(|\mathcal{I}_{ab}|,|\mathcal{I}_{ca}|,|\mathcal{I}_{bc}|\big)$ independent coupling

☞ This expression allows us to determine the metaplectic flavor symmetries

Yukawa couplings for general flux parameters

Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

☞ Using elementary number theory one can reduce the Yukawa coupling to a single ϑ–function

$$Y_{ijk}(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau) = \mathcal{N}_{abc}\, \mathrm{e}^{\frac{H(\widetilde{\zeta},\tau)}{2}}\, \Delta^{(d)}_{i+j,k} \cdot \vartheta\begin{bmatrix} \frac{\mathcal{I}'_{ca}\, i - \mathcal{I}'_{ab}\, j + \mathcal{I}'_{ca}\, (\mathcal{I}'_{ab})^{\phi\left(|\mathcal{I}'_{bc}|\right)}\, (k-i-j)}{\lambda} \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \left(\frac{\widetilde{\zeta}}{d}, \lambda\,\tau\right)$$

➥ Only $\mathrm{lcm}\big(|\mathcal{I}_{ab}|, |\mathcal{I}_{ca}|, |\mathcal{I}_{bc}|\big)$ independent coupling

☞ This expression allows us to determine the metaplectic flavor symmetries

bottom–line:

Magnetized tori with $\lambda = \mathrm{lcm}(\#$ of flavors$)$ exhibit a $\widetilde{\Gamma}_{2\lambda}$ modular flavor symmetry

Metaplectic transformations

cf. also Liu, Yao, Qu & Ding [2020]

☞ Double cover of $\mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})$: the so–called metaplectic group $\widetilde{\Gamma}=\mathrm{Mp}(2,\mathbb{Z})$

Metaplectic transformations

cf. also Liu, Yao, Qu & Ding [2020]

- Double cover of $\mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})$: the so–called metaplectic group $\widetilde{\Gamma}=\mathrm{Mp}(2,\mathbb{Z})$
- Generators $\widetilde{S}$ and $\widetilde{T}$ of $\widetilde{\Gamma}$ satisfy the presentation

$$\widetilde{S}^8=(\widetilde{S}\,\widetilde{T})^3=\mathbb{1}\quad\text{and}\quad\widetilde{S}^2\widetilde{T}=\widetilde{T}\,\widetilde{S}^2$$

- Our choice

$$\widetilde{S}=(S,-\sqrt{-\tau})\quad\text{and}\quad\widetilde{T}=(T,+1)\;,\qquad S,T\in\Gamma$$

Metaplectic transformations

cf. also Liu, Yao, Qu & Ding [2020]

- Double cover of $\mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})$: the so–called metaplectic group $\widetilde{\Gamma}=\mathrm{Mp}(2,\mathbb{Z})$
- Generators $\widetilde{S}$ and $\widetilde{T}$ of $\widetilde{\Gamma}$ satisfy the presentation

$$\widetilde{S}^8=(\widetilde{S}\,\widetilde{T})^3=\mathbb{1}\quad\text{and}\quad\widetilde{S}^2\widetilde{T}=\widetilde{T}\,\widetilde{S}^2$$

- Our choice

$$\widetilde{S}=(S,-\sqrt{-\tau})\quad\text{and}\quad\widetilde{T}=(T,+1)\;,\qquad S,T\in\Gamma$$

- Metaplectic group

$$\widetilde{\Gamma}=\left\{\widetilde{\gamma}=(\gamma,\varphi(\gamma,\tau))\mid\gamma\in\Gamma,\;\varphi(\gamma,\tau)=\pm(c\,\tau+d)^{1/2}\right\}$$

Metaplectic transformations

cf. also Liu, Yao, Qu & Ding [2020]

- Double cover of $\mathrm{SL}(2,\mathbb{Z})$: the so–called metaplectic group $\widetilde{\Gamma}=\mathrm{Mp}(2,\mathbb{Z})$
- Generators $\widetilde{S}$ and $\widetilde{T}$ of $\widetilde{\Gamma}$ satisfy the presentation

$$\widetilde{S}^8=(\widetilde{S}\,\widetilde{T})^3=\mathbb{1}\quad\text{and}\quad\widetilde{S}^2\widetilde{T}=\widetilde{T}\,\widetilde{S}^2$$

- Our choice

$$\widetilde{S}=(S,-\sqrt{-\tau})\quad\text{and}\quad\widetilde{T}=(T,+1)\;,\qquad S,T\in\Gamma$$

- Metaplectic group

$$\widetilde{\Gamma}=\left\{\widetilde{\gamma}=(\gamma,\varphi(\gamma,\tau))\mid\gamma\in\Gamma,\;\varphi(\gamma,\tau)=\pm(c\,\tau+d)^{1/2}\right\}$$

- Multiplication rule

$$(\gamma_1,\,\varphi(\gamma_1,\tau))\,(\gamma_2,\,\varphi(\gamma_2,\tau))=(\gamma_1\gamma_2,\,\varphi(\gamma_1,\gamma_2\,\tau)\varphi(\gamma_2,\tau))$$

Metaplectic flavor symmetries from magnetized tori

☞ Yukawa couplings transform nontrivially under modular transformations

Metaplectic flavor symmetries from magnetized tori

- ☞ Yukawa couplings transform nontrivially under modular transformations
- ☞ Naive expectation: zero–mode wavefunctions get mapped to a linear combination of zero–mode wavefunctions

Metaplectic flavor symmetries from magnetized tori

- ☞ Yukawa couplings transform nontrivially under modular transformations
- ☞ Naive expectation: zero–mode wavefunctions get mapped to a linear combination of zero–mode wavefunctions
- ☞ However, not true for odd flux parameters M

Ohki, Uemura & Watanabe [2020], Kikuchi, Kobayashi, Takada, Tatsuishi & Uchida [2020]

Metaplectic flavor symmetries from magnetized tori

- ☞ Yukawa couplings transform nontrivially under modular transformations
- ☞ Naive expectation: zero–mode wavefunctions get mapped to a linear combination of zero–mode wavefunctions
- ☞ However, not true for odd flux parameters M

  Ohki, Uemura & Watanabe [2020], Kikuchi, Kobayashi, Takada, Tatsuishi & Uchida [2020]
- ☞ Yet this does not indicate an inconsistency. Rather, the true transformation involves either Scherk–Schwarz phases or equivalently a shift of the so–called Wilson line parameter ζ

  Kikuchi, Kobayashi & Uchida [2021], Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021], Tatsuta [2021]

Connection to bottom–up model building

- ☞ Metaplectic flavor symmetries have been studie in bottom–up model building

Liu, Yao, Qu & Ding [2020], Ding, Feruglio & Liu [2021]

Connection to bottom–up model building

- ☞ Metaplectic flavor symmetries have been studie in bottom–up model building

  Liu, Yao, Qu & Ding [2020], Ding, Feruglio & Liu [2021]

- ☞ Torus–derived metaplectic flavor symmetries are first and so far only example in which the bottom–up postulated symmetries have been derived from some explicit setting

  Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

Connection to bottom–up model building

- ☞ Metaplectic flavor symmetries have been studie in bottom–up model building

  Liu, Yao, Qu & Ding [2020], Ding, Feruglio & Liu [2021]

- ☞ Torus–derived metaplectic flavor symmetries are first and so far only example in which the bottom–up postulated symmetries have been derived from some explicit setting

  Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

- ☞ Realistic fits of the neutrino masses have been achieved in the bottom–up approach. . .

Connection to bottom–up model building

- ☞ Metaplectic flavor symmetries have been studie in bottom–up model building

  Liu, Yao, Qu & Ding [2020], Ding, Feruglio & Liu [2021]

- ☞ Torus–derived metaplectic flavor symmetries are first and so far only example in which the bottom–up postulated symmetries have been derived from some explicit setting

  Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

- ☞ Realistic fits of the neutrino masses have been achieved in the bottom–up approach. . .
- ☞ . . . but only at the expense of introducing representations and fixing their modular weights at will

Connection to bottom–up model building

- Metaplectic flavor symmetries have been studie in bottom–up model building

Liu, Yao, Qu & Ding [2020], Ding, Feruglio & Liu [2021]

- Torus–derived metaplectic flavor symmetries are first and so far only example in which the bottom–up postulated symmetries have been derived from some explicit setting

Almumin, Chen, Knapp-Pérez, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Shukla [2021]

- Realistic fits of the neutrino masses have been achieved in the bottom–up approach. . .

- . . . but only at the expense of introducing representations and fixing their modular weights at will

➥ More efforts required to endow phenomenologically promising bottom–up constructions with a UV completion

Eclectic
flavor
symmetries

Eclectic flavor symmetries in heterotic orbifolds

Nilles, Ramos–Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2021], Baur, Kade, Nilles, Ramos-Sanchez & Vaudrevange [2021]

- ☞ Discrete flavor symmetries are identified as the outer automorphisms of the Narain space group

Eclectic flavor symmetries in heterotic orbifolds

Nilles, Ramos–Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2021], Baur, Kade, Nilles, Ramos-Sanchez & Vaudrevange [2021]

- Discrete flavor symmetries are identified as the outer automorphisms of the Narain space group
- Roughly speaking

$$G_{\text{eclectic}} = G_{\text{traditional}} \cup G_{\text{modular}} = \Delta(54) \cup T' = \mathsf{GL}(2,3)$$

double cover of A_4

$\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold

Eclectic flavor symmetries in heterotic orbifolds

Nilles, Ramos–Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2021], Baur, Kade, Nilles, Ramos-Sanchez & Vaudrevange [2021]

- ☞ Discrete flavor symmetries are identified as the outer automorphisms of the Narain space group
- ☞ Roughly speaking

$$G_{\text{eclectic}} = G_{\text{traditional}} \cup G_{\text{modular}}$$

- ☞ These symmetries include:
  - traditional flavor symmetries
  - modular flavor symmetries
  - R symmetries (including non–Abelian discrete R symmetries)
  - $\mathcal{CP}$ symmetries and $\mathcal{CP}$–like transformations

Eclectic flavor symmetries in heterotic orbifolds

Nilles, Ramos–Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2021], Baur, Kade, Nilles, Ramos-Sanchez & Vaudrevange [2021]

☞ Discrete flavor symmetries are identified as the outer automorphisms of the Narain space group

☞ Roughly speaking

$$G_{\text{eclectic}} = G_{\text{traditional}} \cup G_{\text{modular}}$$

☞ These symmetries include:

- traditional flavor symmetries
- modular flavor symmetries
- R symmetries (including non–Abelian discrete R symmetries)
- $\mathcal{CP}$ symmetries and $\mathcal{CP}$–like transformations

☞ These symmetries are gauged

cf. Giveon, Porrati & Rabinovici [1994], Beye, Kobayashi & Kuwakino [2014], Biermann, Mütter, Parr, M.R. & Vaudrevange [2019]

Eclectic flavor symmetries in heterotic orbifolds

Nilles, Ramos–Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2021], Baur, Kade, Nilles, Ramos-Sanchez & Vaudrevange [2021]

☞ Discrete flavor symmetries are identified as the outer automorphisms of the Narain space group

☞ Roughly speaking

$$G_{\text{eclectic}} = G_{\text{traditional}} \cup G_{\text{modular}}$$

☞ These symmetries include:

- traditional flavor symmetries
- modular flavor symmetries
- R symmetries (including non–Abelian discrete R symmetries)
- $\mathcal{CP}$ symmetries and $\mathcal{CP}$–like transformations

☞ These symmetries are gauged

cf. Giveon, Porrati & Rabinovici [1994], Beye, Kobayashi & Kuwakino [2014], Biermann, Mütter, Parr, M.R. & Vaudrevange [2019]

☞ So far no explicit realization of successful bottom–up models

Quasi–eclectic flavor symmetries

Chen, Knapp-Perez, Ramos-Hamud, Ramos-Sanchez, M.R., & Shukla [2021]

- ☞ Using some of the ingredients of the eclectic scheme one may make bottom–up models predictive

Quasi–eclectic flavor symmetries

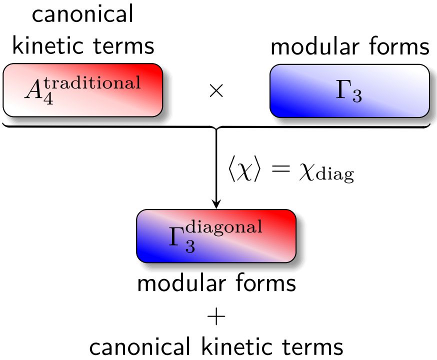
Chen, Knapp-Perez, Ramos-Hamud, Ramos-Sanchez, M.R., & Shukla [2021]

- ☞ Using some of the ingredients of the eclectic scheme one may make bottom–up models predictive
- ☞ Basic ingredient: representations which transform nontrivially under both $G_\text{traditional}$ and G_modular

Quasi–eclectic flavor symmetries

Chen, Knapp-Perez, Ramos-Hamud, Ramos-Sanchez, M.R., & Shukla [2021]

- ☞ Using some of the ingredients of the eclectic scheme one may make bottom–up models predictive
- ☞ Basic ingredient: representations which transform nontrivially under both $G_{\text{traditional}}$ and G_{modular}
- ☞ The "diagonal" subgroup of $G_{\text{traditional}}$ and G_{modular} can be sufficiently predictive



canonical kinetic terms

modular forms

$$\underbrace{A_4^{\text{traditional}} \times \Gamma_3} \xrightarrow{\langle\chi\rangle = \chi_{\text{diag}}} \Gamma_3^{\text{diagonal}}$$

modular forms

+

canonical kinetic terms

Generation Flow

History

- ☞ Nelson and Strassler showed in field theory that one can obtain one chiral SM generation from states that are vector–like under G_{SM}

Strassler [1996], Nelson & Strassler [1997]

History

- ☞ Nelson and Strassler showed in field theory that one can obtain one chiral SM generation from states that are vector–like under G_{SM}

  Strassler [1996], Nelson & Strassler [1997]

- ☞ There are several stringy models which similarly effects occur

  Kachru & Silverstein [1997], Aldazabal et al. [1998], Douglas & Zhou [2004], Anderson et al. [2016],. . .

History

- ☞ Nelson and Strassler showed in field theory that one can obtain one chiral SM generation from states that are vector–like under G_{SM}

  Strassler [1996], Nelson & Strassler [1997]

- ☞ There are several stringy models which similarly effects occur

  Kachru & Silverstein [1997], Aldazabal et al. [1998], Douglas & Zhou [2004], Anderson et al. [2016],. . .

- ☞ More recently, Razamat and Tong used the Nelson–Strassler scenario to give a chiral generation a mass

  Razamat & Tong [2021]

History

- ☞ Nelson and Strassler showed in field theory that one can obtain one chiral SM generation from states that are vector–like under G_{SM}

  Strassler [1996], Nelson & Strassler [1997]

- ☞ There are several stringy models which similarly effects occur

  Kachru & Silverstein [1997], Aldazabal et al. [1998], Douglas & Zhou [2004], Anderson et al. [2016],. . .

- ☞ More recently, Razamat and Tong used the Nelson–Strassler scenario to give a chiral generation a mass

  Razamat & Tong [2021]

this talk:

Stringy realization of Nelson–Strassler and Razamat–Tong scenarios

The Nelson–Strassler and Razamat–Tong scenarios

Strassler [1996], Nelson & Strassler [1997], Razamat & Tong [2021]

- ☞ Supersymmetric model with gauge group $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ and a global (or weakly gauged) $\mathrm{SU}(6) \subset \mathrm{SU}(5)_{\mathrm{GG}} \times \mathrm{U}(1)$ symmetry and matter content

$$(\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2}) \oplus (\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1}) \to (\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{2})_1 \oplus (\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})_{-5} \oplus (\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})_{-2} \oplus (\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})_4$$

The Nelson–Strassler and Razamat–Tong scenarios

Strassler [1996], Nelson & Strassler [1997], Razamat & Tong [2021]

- ☞ Supersymmetric model with gauge group $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ and a global (or weakly gauged) $\mathrm{SU}(6) \subset \mathrm{SU}(5)_{\mathrm{GG}} \times \mathrm{U}(1)$ symmetry and matter content

$$(\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2}) \oplus (\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1}) \to (\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{2})_1 \oplus (\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})_{-5} \oplus (\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})_{-2} \oplus (\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})_4$$

- ☞ From the $\mathrm{SU}(5)_{\mathrm{GG}} \supset G_{\mathrm{SM}}$ point of view this is one generation $(\mathbf{10}+\overline{\mathbf{5}})$ plus vectorlike $(\mathbf{5}+\overline{\mathbf{5}})$

The Nelson–Strassler and Razamat–Tong scenarios

Strassler [1996], Nelson & Strassler [1997], Razamat & Tong [2021]

- ☞ Supersymmetric model with gauge group $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ and a global (or weakly gauged) $\mathrm{SU}(6) \subset \mathrm{SU}(5)_{\mathrm{GG}} \times \mathrm{U}(1)$ symmetry and matter content

$$(\overline{\mathbf{6}}, \mathbf{2}) \oplus (\mathbf{15}, \mathbf{1}) \to (\overline{\mathbf{5}}, \mathbf{2})_1 \oplus (\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{2})_{-5} \oplus (\mathbf{10}, \mathbf{1})_{-2} \oplus (\mathbf{5}, \mathbf{1})_4$$

- ☞ From the $\mathrm{SU}(5)_{\mathrm{GG}} \supset G_{\mathrm{SM}}$ point of view this is one generation $(\mathbf{10} + \overline{\mathbf{5}})$ plus vectorlike $(\mathbf{5} + \overline{\mathbf{5}})$
- ☞ When $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ undergoes "s–confinement", the $(\overline{\mathbf{6}}, \mathbf{2})$ form "baryons" transforming as $(\overline{\mathbf{6}} \times \overline{\mathbf{6}})_{\mathrm{a}} = \overline{\mathbf{15}} \to \overline{\mathbf{10}} + \overline{\mathbf{5}}$

Seiberg [1994], Csáki, Schmaltz & Skiba [1997a,b]

The Nelson–Strassler and Razamat–Tong scenarios

Strassler [1996], Nelson & Strassler [1997], Razamat & Tong [2021]

- ☞ Supersymmetric model with gauge group $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ and a global (or weakly gauged) $\mathrm{SU}(6) \subset \mathrm{SU}(5)_{\mathrm{GG}} \times \mathrm{U}(1)$ symmetry and matter content

$$(\overline{\boldsymbol{6}},\boldsymbol{2}) \oplus (\boldsymbol{15},\boldsymbol{1}) \to (\overline{\boldsymbol{5}},\boldsymbol{2})_1 \oplus (\boldsymbol{1},\boldsymbol{2})_{-5} \oplus (\boldsymbol{10},\boldsymbol{1})_{-2} \oplus (\boldsymbol{5},\boldsymbol{1})_4$$

- ☞ From the $\mathrm{SU}(5)_{\mathrm{GG}} \supset G_{\mathrm{SM}}$ point of view this is one generation $(\boldsymbol{10}+\overline{\boldsymbol{5}})$ plus vectorlike $(\boldsymbol{5}+\overline{\boldsymbol{5}})$
- ☞ When $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ undergoes "s–confinement", the $(\overline{\boldsymbol{6}},\boldsymbol{2})$ form "baryons" transforming as $(\overline{\boldsymbol{6}}\times\overline{\boldsymbol{6}})_{\mathrm{a}} = \overline{\boldsymbol{15}} \to \overline{\boldsymbol{10}}+\boldsymbol{5}$

Seiberg [1994], Csáki, Schmaltz & Skiba [1997a,b]

- ☞ Generation flow $1 \rightsquigarrow 0$: after s–confinement we are left with vector–like states only

$$(\overline{\boldsymbol{6}},\boldsymbol{2}) \oplus (\boldsymbol{15},\boldsymbol{1}) \xrightarrow{s\text{–confinement}} \overline{\boldsymbol{15}} \oplus \boldsymbol{15}$$

The Nelson–Strassler and Razamat–Tong scenarios

Strassler [1996], Nelson & Strassler [1997], Razamat & Tong [2021]

- Supersymmetric model with gauge group $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ and a global (or weakly gauged) $\mathrm{SU}(6) \subset \mathrm{SU}(5)_{\mathrm{GG}} \times \mathrm{U}(1)$ symmetry and matter content

$$(\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2}) \oplus (\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1}) \to (\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{2})_1 \oplus (\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})_{-5} \oplus (\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})_{-2} \oplus (\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})_4$$

- From the $\mathrm{SU}(5)_{\mathrm{GG}} \supset G_{\mathrm{SM}}$ point of view this is one generation $(\mathbf{10}+\overline{\mathbf{5}})$ plus vectorlike $(\mathbf{5}+\overline{\mathbf{5}})$
- When $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ undergoes "s–confinement", the $(\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2})$ form "baryons" transforming as $(\overline{\mathbf{6}} \times \overline{\mathbf{6}})_{\mathrm{a}} = \overline{\mathbf{15}} \to \overline{\mathbf{10}} + \mathbf{5}$

Seiberg [1994], Csáki, Schmaltz & Skiba [1997a,b]

- Generation flow $1 \rightsquigarrow 0$: after s–confinement we are left with vector–like states only

$$(\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2}) \oplus (\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1}) \xrightarrow{s\text{–confinement}} \overline{\mathbf{15}} \oplus \mathbf{15}$$

- Given appropriate trilinear couplings the vector–like states can acquire mass

Razamat & Tong [2021]

The $4 \rightsquigarrow 3$ model

- ☞ Unconfined spectrum

#	irrep	label
4	$(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})$	T
2	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F}$
1	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{2})$	$\overline{F}'$
1	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})$	ϕ
1	$(\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})$	F
1	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F}$

The $4 \rightsquigarrow 3$ model

☞ Unconfined spectrum

#	irrep	label
4	$(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})$	T
2	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F}$
1	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{2})$	$\overline{F}'$
1	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})$	ϕ
1	$(\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})$	F
1	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F}$

☞ Confined spectrum

#	irrep	label
4	$(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})$	T
4	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F},\overline{\mathcal{F}}$
1	$(\overline{\mathbf{10}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{\mathcal{T}}$
1	$(\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})$	F

The $4 \rightsquigarrow 3$ models

☞ Unconfined spectrum

#	irrep	label
4	$(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})$	T
2	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F}$
1	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{2})$	$\overline{F}'$
1	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})$	ϕ

☞ Confined spectrum

#	irrep	label
4	$(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})$	T
4	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F},\overline{\mathcal{F}}$
1	$(\overline{\mathbf{10}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{\mathcal{T}}$
1	$(\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})$	F

The $2 \rightsquigarrow 3$ model

- ☞ Unconfined spectrum

#	irrep	label
2	$(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})$	T
4	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F}$
1	$(\mathbf{5},\mathbf{2})$	F'
1	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})$	ϕ

The $2 \rightsquigarrow 3$ model

☞ Unconfined spectrum

#	irrep	label
2	$(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})$	T
4	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F}$
1	$(\mathbf{5},\mathbf{2})$	F'
1	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})$	ϕ

☞ Confined spectrum

#	irrep	label
3	$(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})$	$T,\mathcal{T}$
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F}$
1	$(\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{1})$	$\overline{F}$
1	$(\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})$	$\mathcal{F}$

Comment on the representation content and symmetries

☞ Is $(\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2})\oplus(\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1})$ under $\mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ contrived?

Comment on the representation content and symmetries

- ☞ Is $(\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2})\oplus(\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1})$ under $\mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ contrived or baroque?

Comment on the representation content and symmetries

- ☞ Is $(\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2})\oplus(\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1})$ under $\mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ contrived or baroque?
- ☞ No, exceptional! $\mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ is a maximal subgroup of E_6 and the matter content fits exactly into a $\mathbf{27}$–plet

Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Shirman, Shukla & Waterbury [2021]

$$\begin{aligned}\mathsf{E}_6 &\to \mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s\\ &\to \mathrm{SU}(5)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s\times\mathrm{U}(1)\\ \mathbf{27} &\to (\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2})\oplus(\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1})\\ &\to (\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{2})_1\oplus(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})_{-5}\oplus(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})_{-2}\oplus(\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})_4\end{aligned}$$

Comment on the representation content and symmetries

- ☞ Is $(\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2})\oplus(\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1})$ under $\mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ contrived or baroque?
- ☞ No, exceptional! $\mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ is a maximal subgroup of E_6 and the matter content fits exactly into a $\mathbf{27}$–plet

Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Shirman, Shukla & Waterbury [2021]

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathsf{E}_6 &\to \mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s\\
&\to \mathrm{SU}(5)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s\times\mathrm{U}(1)\\
\mathbf{27} &\to (\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2})\oplus(\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1})\\
&\to (\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{2})_1\oplus(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})_{-5}\oplus(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})_{-2}\oplus(\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})_4
\end{aligned}
$$

- ☞ So it is not surprising that anomalies cancel

Comment on the representation content and symmetries

- ☞ Is $(\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2})\oplus(\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1})$ under $\mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ contrived or baroque?
- ☞ No, exceptional! $\mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ is a maximal subgroup of E_6 and the matter content fits exactly into a $\mathbf{27}$–plet

Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Shirman, Shukla & Waterbury [2021]

$$\begin{aligned}\mathsf{E}_6 &\to \mathrm{SU}(6)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s\\ &\to \mathrm{SU}(5)\times\mathrm{SU}(2)_s\times\mathrm{U}(1)\\ \mathbf{27} &\to (\overline{\mathbf{6}},\mathbf{2})\oplus(\mathbf{15},\mathbf{1})\\ &\to (\overline{\mathbf{5}},\mathbf{2})_1\oplus(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})_{-5}\oplus(\mathbf{10},\mathbf{1})_{-2}\oplus(\mathbf{5},\mathbf{1})_4\end{aligned}$$

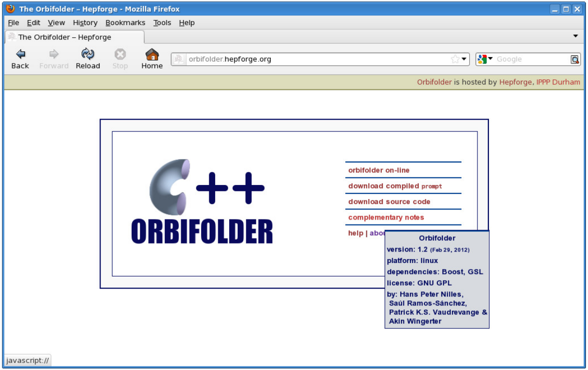
- ☞ So it is not surprising that anomalies cancel
- ☞ However, are there reasons why $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ can be more strongly coupled than $\mathrm{SU}(6)$?

Stringy realization

Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Shirman, Shukla & Waterbury [2021]

☞ Scan $\mathrm{E}_8\times\mathrm{E}_8$ heterotic orbifolds for models in which $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ and $\mathrm{SU}(6)$ come from different E_8 factors

Nilles, Ramos-Sánchez, Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2012]



Orbifolder is hosted by Hepforge, IPPP Durham

orbifolder on-line

download compiled prompt

download source code

complementary notes

help | abo

Orbifolder
version: 1.2 (Feb 29, 2012)
platform: linux
dependencies: Boost, GSL
license: GNU GPL
by: Hans Peter Nilles,
Saúl Ramos-Sánchez,
Patrick K.S. Vaudrevange &
Akin Wingerter

Stringy realization

Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Shirman, Shukla & Waterbury [2021]

- ☞ Scan $\mathrm{E}_8 \times \mathrm{E}_8$ heterotic orbifolds for models in which $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ and $\mathrm{SU}(6)$ come from different E_8 factors
- ☞ We find several $4{\rightsquigarrow}3$ and $2{\rightsquigarrow}3$ models in the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_4$ (1,1) geometry

Stringy realization

Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Shirman, Shukla & Waterbury [2021]

- ☞ Scan $\mathrm{E}_8 \times \mathrm{E}_8$ heterotic orbifolds for models in which $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ and $\mathrm{SU}(6)$ come from different E_8 factors
- ☞ We find several $4{\rightsquigarrow}3$ and $2{\rightsquigarrow}3$ models in the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_4$ (1,1) geometry
- ☞ These models have vectorlike states which can be decoupled consistently with supersymmetry

Stringy realization

Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Shirman, Shukla & Waterbury [2021]

- ☞ Scan $\mathrm{E}_8 \times \mathrm{E}_8$ heterotic orbifolds for models in which $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ and $\mathrm{SU}(6)$ come from different E_8 factors
- ☞ We find several $4{\rightsquigarrow}3$ and $2{\rightsquigarrow}3$ models in the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_4$ (1,1) geometry
- ☞ These models have vectorlike states which can be decoupled consistently with supersymmetry
- ☞ The couplings required to pair up composites with the 4th generation also exist

Stringy realization

Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Shirman, Shukla & Waterbury [2021]

- ☞ Scan $\mathrm{E}_8 \times \mathrm{E}_8$ heterotic orbifolds for models in which $\mathrm{SU}(2)_s$ and $\mathrm{SU}(6)$ come from different E_8 factors
- ☞ We find several $4{\rightsquigarrow}3$ and $2{\rightsquigarrow}3$ models in the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_4$ (1,1) geometry
- ☞ These models have vectorlike states which can be decoupled consistently with supersymmetry
- ☞ The couplings required to pair up composites with the 4th generation also exist

bottom–line:

String theory appears to host models exhibiting generation flow $\curvearrowright$ it is not enough to count the generations at the tree level

Implications for string model building

☞ Chiral spectrum may change in the low–energy effective theory

Implications for string model building

- ☞ Chiral spectrum may change in the low–energy effective theory
- ☞ Many more models

Implications for string model building

- ☞ Chiral spectrum may change in the low–energy effective theory
- ☞ Many more models
- ☞ May also allow one to decouple other unwanted chiral exotics

Implications for string model building

- ☞ Chiral spectrum may change in the low–energy effective theory
- ☞ Many more models
- ☞ May also allow one to decouple other unwanted chiral exotics
- ☞ Better understanding of the QFT dynamics desirable

R symmetries
for the
MSSM

R symmetries in heterotic orbifolds

- ☞ R symmetries can be derived from the so–called H–momentum selection rule

Hamidi & Vafa [1987], Dixon, Friedan, Martinec & Shenker [1987]

⋮

Kobayashi, Raby & Zhang [2005]

R symmetries in heterotic orbifolds

- ☞ R symmetries can be derived from the so–called H–momentum selection rule

  Hamidi & Vafa [1987], Dixon, Friedan, Martinec & Shenker [1987]

  ⋮

  Kobayashi, Raby & Zhang [2005]

- ☞ The R charges have undergone some revisions

  Nilles, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Vaudrevange [2013], Cabo Bizet, Kobayashi, Mayorga Peña, Parameswaran, Schmitz & Zavala [2013]

R symmetries in heterotic orbifolds

- ☞ R symmetries can be derived from the so–called H–momentum selection rule

Hamidi & Vafa [1987], Dixon, Friedan, Martinec & Shenker [1987]

⋮

Kobayashi, Raby & Zhang [2005]

- ☞ The R charges have undergone some revisions

Nilles, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Vaudrevange [2013], Cabo Bizet, Kobayashi, Mayorga Peña, Parameswaran, Schmitz & Zavala [2013]

- ☞ The R symmetries can be instrumental for the stabilization of moduli and the generation of hierarchies

▸ details

R symmetries in heterotic orbifolds

☞ R symmetries can be derived from the so–called H–momentum selection rule

Hamidi & Vafa [1987], Dixon, Friedan, Martinec & Shenker [1987]

⋮

Kobayashi, Raby & Zhang [2005]

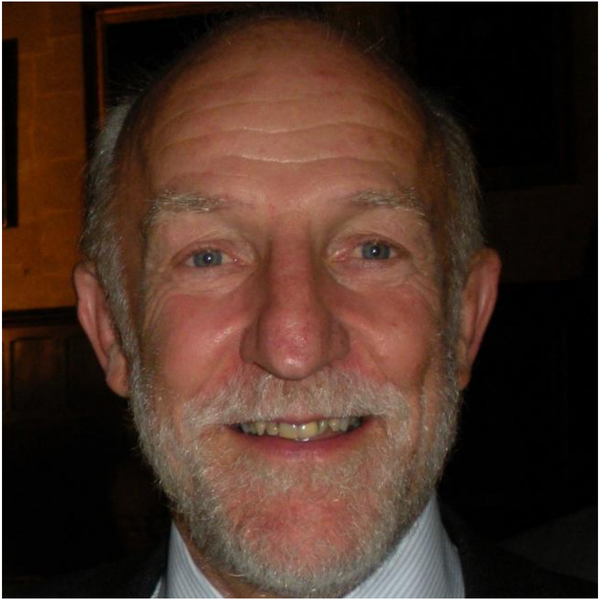
☞ The R charges have undergone some revisions

Nilles, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R. & Vaudrevange [2013], Cabo Bizet, Kobayashi, Mayorga Peña, Parameswaran, Schmitz & Zavala [2013]

☞ The R symmetries can be instrumental for the stabilization of moduli and the generation of hierarchies

▸ details

☞ This talk: focus on implications of $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ for MSSM model building



www.physics.ox.ac.uk/

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ features

☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is the unique symmetry that allows us to forbid the μ term in the MSSM when one demands $\mathrm{SO}(10)$ relations

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ features

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is the unique symmetry that allows us to forbid the μ term in the MSSM when one demands $\mathrm{SO}(10)$ relations

  Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ appears anomalous but anomaly is cancelled by the Green–Schwarz axion, $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is nonlinearly realized

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ features

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is the unique symmetry that allows us to forbid the μ term in the MSSM when one demands $\mathrm{SO}(10)$ relations

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ appears anomalous but anomaly is cancelled by the Green–Schwarz axion, $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is nonlinearly realized
- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_2 \subset \mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is anomaly–free without GS axion and exact, and is in fact nothing but the well–known R parity or matter parity

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ features

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is the unique symmetry that allows us to forbid the μ term in the MSSM when one demands $\mathrm{SO}(10)$ relations

  Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]
- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ appears anomalous but anomaly is cancelled by the Green–Schwarz axion, $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is nonlinearly realized
- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_2 \subset \mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is anomaly–free without GS axion and exact, and is in fact nothing but the well–known R parity or matter parity
- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is broken by the superpotential expectation value, i.e. the gravitino mass

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ features

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is the unique symmetry that allows us to forbid the μ term in the MSSM when one demands $\mathrm{SO}(10)$ relations

  Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ appears anomalous but anomaly is cancelled by the Green–Schwarz axion, $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is nonlinearly realized
- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_2 \subset \mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is anomaly–free without GS axion and exact, and is in fact nothing but the well–known R parity or matter parity
- ☞ $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is broken by the superpotential expectation value, i.e. the gravitino mass
- ☞ The fact that this breaking is tied to an anomaly is what one expects in models of dynamical supersymmetry breaking

  Witten [1981] ,. . . ,Shadmi & Shirman [2000] ,. . . ,Intriligator, Seiberg & Shih [2006]

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ summarized

Babu, Gogoladze & Wang [2003a], Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a,b]

☞ Gauge invariant superpotential up to order 4

$$\begin{aligned}\mathscr{W}_{\text{gauge invariant}} = {} & \mu\, \boldsymbol{h}_d \boldsymbol{h}_u + \kappa_i\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_i \boldsymbol{h}_u \\ & + Y_e^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g \boldsymbol{h}_d \boldsymbol{e}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_d^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g \boldsymbol{h}_d \boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_u^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g \boldsymbol{h}_u \boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \lambda_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g \boldsymbol{\ell}_f \boldsymbol{e}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda'_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g \boldsymbol{q}_f \boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda''_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \kappa_{gf}\, \boldsymbol{h}_u \boldsymbol{\ell}_g\, \boldsymbol{h}_u \boldsymbol{\ell}_f + \kappa_{gfk\ell}^{(1)}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g \boldsymbol{q}_f \boldsymbol{q}_k \boldsymbol{\ell}_\ell + \kappa_{gfk\ell}^{(2)}\, \boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{e}_\ell^{\mathcal{C}}\end{aligned}$$

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ summarized

Babu, Gogoladze & Wang [2003a], Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a,b]

- ☞ Gauge invariant superpotential up to order 4

$$\begin{aligned}\mathscr{W}_{\text{gauge invariant}} = {}& \mu\, \boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{h}_u + \kappa_i\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_i\boldsymbol{h}_u \\ & + Y_e^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{e}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_d^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_u^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \lambda_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{\ell}_f\boldsymbol{e}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda'_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{q}_f\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda''_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \kappa_{gf}\, \boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\, \boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{\ell}_f + \kappa^{(1)}_{gfk\ell}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{q}_f\boldsymbol{q}_k\boldsymbol{\ell}_\ell + \kappa^{(2)}_{gfk\ell}\, \boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{e}_\ell^{\mathcal{C}}\end{aligned}$$

- ☞ Yukawa couplings and Weinberg operator allowed

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ summarized

Babu, Gogoladze & Wang [2003a], Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a,b]

- Gauge invariant superpotential up to order 4

Yukawa couplings

$$\begin{aligned}\mathscr{W}_{\text{gauge invariant}} = {} & \mu\, \boldsymbol{h}_d \boldsymbol{h}_u + \kappa_i\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_i \boldsymbol{h}_u \\ & + Y_e^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g \boldsymbol{h}_d \boldsymbol{e}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_d^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g \boldsymbol{h}_d \boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_u^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g \boldsymbol{h}_u \boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \lambda_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g \boldsymbol{\ell}_f \boldsymbol{e}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda'_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g \boldsymbol{q}_f \boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda''_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \kappa_{gf}\, \boldsymbol{h}_u \boldsymbol{\ell}_g\, \boldsymbol{h}_u \boldsymbol{\ell}_f + \kappa^{(1)}_{gfk\ell}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g \boldsymbol{q}_f \boldsymbol{q}_k \boldsymbol{\ell}_\ell + \kappa^{(2)}_{gfk\ell}\, \boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{e}_\ell^{\mathcal{C}}\end{aligned}$$

effective neutrino mass operator

- Yukawa couplings and Weinberg operator allowed

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ summarized

Babu, Gogoladze & Wang [2003a], Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a,b]

- ☞ Gauge invariant superpotential up to order 4

$$\begin{aligned}\mathscr{W}_{\text{gauge invariant}} = {} & \mu\,\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{h}_u + \kappa_i\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_i\boldsymbol{h}_u \\ & + Y_e^{gf}\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{e}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_d^{gf}\,\boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_u^{gf}\,\boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \lambda_{gfk}\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{\ell}_f\boldsymbol{e}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda'_{gfk}\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{q}_f\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda''_{gfk}\,\boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \kappa_{gf}\,\boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\,\boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{\ell}_f + \kappa_{gfk\ell}^{(1)}\,\boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{q}_f\boldsymbol{q}_k\boldsymbol{\ell}_\ell + \kappa_{gfk\ell}^{(2)}\,\boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{e}_\ell^{\mathcal{C}}\end{aligned}$$

- ☞ Yukawa couplings and Weinberg operator allowed
- ☞ R–parity violating couplings forbidden by unbroken $\mathbb{Z}_2$ subgroup of $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ summarized

Babu, Gogoladze & Wang [2003a], Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a,b]

- Gauge invariant superpotential up to order 4

$$\begin{aligned}\mathscr{W}_{\text{gauge invariant}} = {} & \mu\,\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{h}_u + \kappa_i\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_i\boldsymbol{h}_u \\ & + Y_e^{gf}\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{e}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_d^{gf}\,\boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_u^{gf}\,\boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \lambda_{gfk}\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{\ell}_f\boldsymbol{e}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda'_{gfk}\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{q}_f\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda''_{gfk}\,\boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \kappa_{gf}\,\boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\,\boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{\ell}_f + \kappa_{gfk\ell}^{(1)}\,\boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{q}_f\boldsymbol{q}_k\boldsymbol{\ell}_\ell + \kappa_{gfk\ell}^{(2)}\,\boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{e}_\ell^{\mathcal{C}}\end{aligned}$$

R–parity violation

- Yukawa couplings and Weinberg operator allowed
- R–parity violating couplings forbidden by unbroken $\mathbb{Z}_2$ subgroup of $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ summarized

Babu, Gogoladze & Wang [2003a], Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a,b]

- ☞ Gauge invariant superpotential up to order 4

$$\begin{aligned}\mathscr{W}_{\text{gauge invariant}} = {} & \mu\,\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{h}_u + \kappa_i\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_i\boldsymbol{h}_u \\ & + Y_e^{gf}\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{e}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_d^{gf}\,\boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{h}_d\boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_u^{gf}\,\boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \lambda_{gfk}\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{\ell}_f\boldsymbol{e}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda'_{gfk}\,\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\boldsymbol{q}_f\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda''_{gfk}\,\boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \kappa_{gf}\,\boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{\ell}_g\,\boldsymbol{h}_u\boldsymbol{\ell}_f + \kappa_{gfk\ell}^{(1)}\,\boldsymbol{q}_g\boldsymbol{q}_f\boldsymbol{q}_k\boldsymbol{\ell}_\ell + \kappa_{gfk\ell}^{(2)}\,\boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}}\boldsymbol{e}_\ell^{\mathcal{C}}\end{aligned}$$

- ☞ Yukawa couplings and Weinberg operator allowed
- ☞ R–parity violating couplings forbidden by unbroken $\mathbb{Z}_2$ subgroup of $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$
- ☞ μ term and proton decay operators proportional to the order parameter of $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ breaking, i.e. $m_{3/2} \simeq \langle \mathscr{W} \rangle / M_{\mathsf{P}}^2$

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ summarized

Babu, Gogoladze & Wang [2003a], Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a,b]

$\simeq \mathcal{O}(m_{3/2})$

- Gauge invariant superpotential up to order 4

$$\begin{aligned}\mathscr{W}_{\text{gauge invariant}} = {} & \mu\, \boldsymbol{h}_d \boldsymbol{h}_u + \kappa_i\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_i \boldsymbol{h}_u \\ & + Y_e^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g \boldsymbol{h}_d \boldsymbol{e}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_d^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g \boldsymbol{h}_d \boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}} + Y_u^{gf}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g \boldsymbol{h}_u \boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \lambda_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g \boldsymbol{\ell}_f \boldsymbol{e}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda'_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{\ell}_g \boldsymbol{q}_f \boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} + \lambda''_{gfk}\, \boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{d}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} \\ & + \kappa_{gf}\, \boldsymbol{h}_u \boldsymbol{\ell}_g\, \boldsymbol{h}_u \boldsymbol{\ell}_f + \kappa_{gfk\ell}^{(1)}\, \boldsymbol{q}_g \boldsymbol{q}_f \boldsymbol{q}_k \boldsymbol{\ell}_\ell + \kappa_{gfk\ell}^{(2)}\, \boldsymbol{u}_g^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{u}_f^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{d}_k^{\mathcal{C}} \boldsymbol{e}_\ell^{\mathcal{C}}\end{aligned}$$

$\sim \frac{m_{3/2}}{M_{\text{P}}^2}$

- Yukawa couplings and Weinberg operator allowed
- R–parity violating couplings forbidden by unbroken $\mathbb{Z}_2$ subgroup of $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$
- μ term and proton decay operators proportional to the order parameter of $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ breaking, i.e. $m_{3/2} \simeq \langle \mathscr{W} \rangle / M_{\text{P}}^2$

Summary

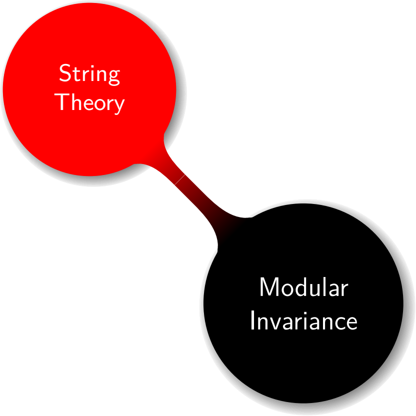
and

outlook

Ever–growing importance of modular invariance

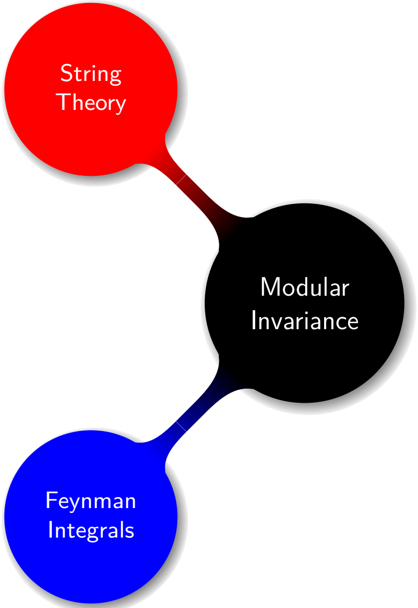
Modular
Invariance

Ever–growing importance of modular invariance


String Theory

Modular Invariance

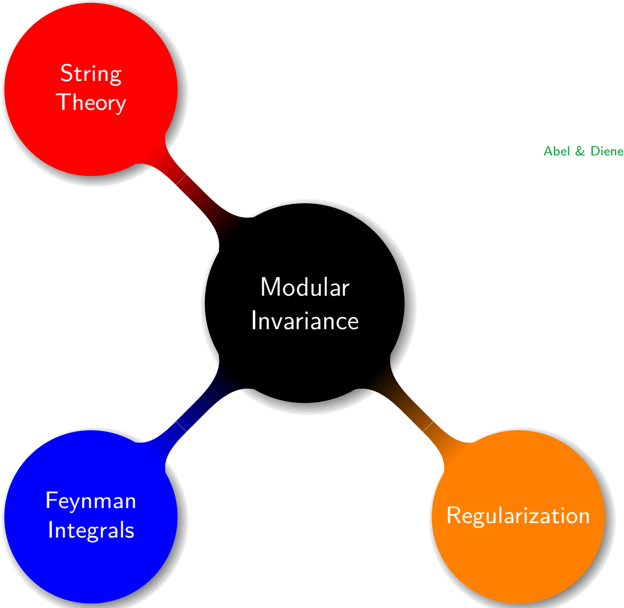
Ever–growing importance of modular invariance


String Theory

Modular Invariance

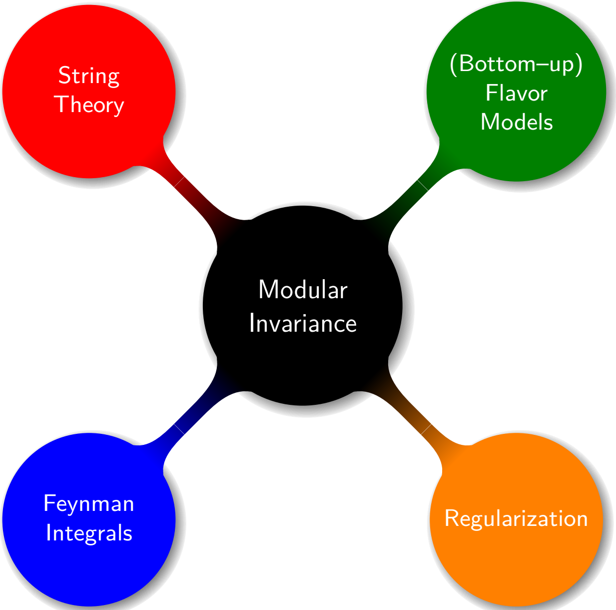
Feynman Integrals

Ever–growing importance of modular invariance



Abel & Dienes [2021]

Ever–growing importance of modular invariance



. . . and other symmetries

- ☞ Repetition of families may be “explained” by flavor symmetries

. . . and other symmetries

- ☞ Repetition of families may be "explained" by flavor symmetries
- ☞ $\mathcal{CP}$ violation may have its origin in finite groups

. . . and other symmetries

- ☞ Repetition of families may be “explained” by flavor symmetries
- ☞ $\mathcal{CP}$ violation may have its origin in finite groups . . . and this mechanism has an explicit string theory realization

. . . and other symmetries

- ☞ Repetition of families may be “explained” by flavor symmetries
- ☞ $\mathcal{CP}$ violation may have its origin in finite groups . . . and this mechanism has an explicit string theory realization
- ☞ R symmetries appear to be instrumental to address the shortcomings of supersymmetric standard models

. . . and other symmetries

- ☞ Repetition of families may be “explained” by flavor symmetries
- ☞ $\mathcal{CP}$ violation may have its origin in finite groups . . . and this mechanism has an explicit string theory realization
- ☞ R symmetries appear to be instrumental to address the shortcomings of supersymmetric standard models . . . and are part of some explicit string–derived MSSM models

. . . and other symmetries

- ☞ Repetition of families may be "explained" by flavor symmetries
- ☞ $\mathcal{CP}$ violation may have its origin in finite groups . . . and this mechanism has an explicit string theory realization
- ☞ R symmetries appear to be instrumental to address the shortcomings of supersymmetric standard models . . . and are part of some explicit string–derived MSSM models
- ☞ So–called eclectic symmetries contain all the above, and appear in explicit string models

Lessons for model building

- ☞ We do not have explicit string theory realizations of phenomenologically successful models of flavor

Lessons for model building

- ☞ We do not have explicit string theory realizations of phenomenologically successful models of flavor
- ☞ On the other hand, the bottom–up models appear to require input from string theory to become really predictive and allow us to eventually make unequivocal testable predictions

Lessons for model building

- ☞ We do not have explicit string theory realizations of phenomenologically successful models of flavor
- ☞ On the other hand, the bottom–up models appear to require input from string theory to become really predictive and allow us to eventually make unequivocal testable predictions
- ☞ Our past model scans appear even more incomplete than previously appreciated due to the possibility of phenomena such as generation flow

Lessons for model building

- ☞ We do not have explicit string theory realizations of phenomenologically successful models of flavor
- ☞ On the other hand, the bottom–up models appear to require input from string theory to become really predictive and allow us to eventually make unequivocal testable predictions
- ☞ Our past model scans appear even more incomplete than previously appreciated due to the possibility of phenomena such as generation flow
- ☞ Composites such as those appearing in generation flow scenarios may come with modular weights of the type used in bottom–up models

Outlook

- ☞ Nonsupersymmetric model building (e.g. modular flavor symmetries do not seem to necessarily require supersymmetry)
- ☞ Other new ideas

UNIVERSITÄT BONN

bctp Bethe Center for Theoretical Physics

Bethe Forum

Modular Flavor Symmetries

May 2 - 6, 2022

Bonn, Germany

Speakers include

Mu-Chun Chen
Gui-Jun Ding
Claudia Hagedorn*
Stephen King
Hajime Otsuka
Sergey Petcov
Pierre Ramond
Saúl Ramos-Sánchez
Andrea Romanino*
Morimitsu Tanimoto
Andreas Trautner
Hikaru Uchida*

*to be confirmed

Organizing Committee

Michael Ratz (chair)
Ferruccio Feruglio
Tatsuo Kobayashi
Hans Peter Nilles

Bethe Center for Theoretical Physics
Physikalisches Institut
Universität Bonn
Nußallee 12
53115 Bonn
Phone: (+49) 228 / 73 3770
e-mail: theory@physik.uni-bonn.de
http://bctp.uni-bonn.de

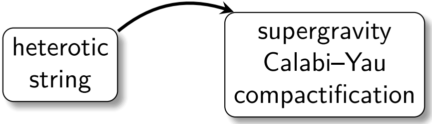
Additional information and application form:

www.bctp.uni-bonn.de/bethe-forum/2022/symmetries

Possible discussion topic: smooth compactifications

- ☞ Famous result: one can obtain Calabi–Yau compactifications from string theory

Candelas, Horowitz, Strominger & Witten [1985]



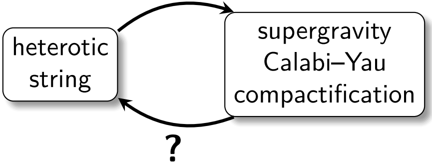
heterotic string

supergravity Calabi–Yau compactification

Possible discussion topic: smooth compactifications

- ☞ Famous result: one can obtain Calabi–Yau compactifications from string theory

Candelas, Horowitz, Strominger & Witten [1985]

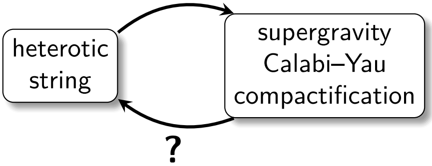


- ☞ However, the converse is less obvious

Possible discussion topic: smooth compactifications

- ☞ Famous result: one can obtain Calabi–Yau compactifications from string theory

Candelas, Horowitz, Strominger & Witten [1985]



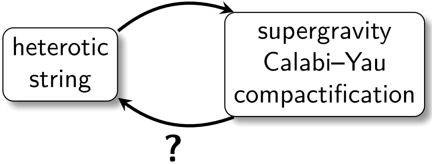
- ☞ However, the converse is less obvious
- ☞ For instance, there seems to be an infinite number of certain line bundles

Groot Nibbelink, Loukas, Ruehle & Vaudrevange [2015]

Possible discussion topic: smooth compactifications

- ☞ Famous result: one can obtain Calabi–Yau compactifications from string theory

Candelas, Horowitz, Strominger & Witten [1985]



- ☞ However, the converse is less obvious
- ☞ For instance, there seems to be an infinite number of certain line bundles

Groot Nibbelink, Loukas, Ruehle & Vaudrevange [2015]

provocative question:

Is it clear that all Calabi–Yau models are string compacifications? If not, how can one tell which of them are?

Another discussion topic: intersecting D–brane models

- ☞ There is a huge literature of semi–realistic D–brane models

see e.g. Ibáñez & Uranga [2012]

Another discussion topic: intersecting D–brane models

- ☞ There is a huge literature of semi–realistic D–brane models

  see e.g. Ibáñez & Uranga [2012]

- ☞ Duality with magnetic torus compactifications

  Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2003]

Another discussion topic: intersecting D–brane models

- ☞ There is a huge literature of semi–realistic D–brane models

  see e.g. Ibáñez & Uranga [2012]

- ☞ Duality with magnetic torus compactifications

  Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2003]

- ☞ However, a recent analysis of the vacuum structure of magnetized tori suggests that their true vacua are nonchiral

  Buchmüller, Dudas & Tatsuta [2021]

Another discussion topic: intersecting D–brane models

- ☞ There is a huge literature of semi–realistic D–brane models

  see e.g. Ibáñez & Uranga [2012]

- ☞ Duality with magnetic torus compactifications

  Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2003]

- ☞ However, a recent analysis of the vacuum structure of magnetized tori suggests that their true vacua are nonchiral

  Buchmüller, Dudas & Tatsuta [2021]

- ☞ Yet magnetized tori are dual to intersecting D–brane models

  c.f. e.g. Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

Another discussion topic: intersecting D–brane models

- ☞ There is a huge literature of semi–realistic D–brane models

  see e.g. Ibáñez & Uranga [2012]

- ☞ Duality with magnetic torus compactifications

  Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2003]

- ☞ However, a recent analysis of the vacuum structure of magnetized tori suggests that their true vacua are nonchiral

  Buchmüller, Dudas & Tatsuta [2021]

- ☞ Yet magnetized tori are dual to intersecting D–brane models

  c.f. e.g. Cremades, Ibáñez & Marchesano [2004]

provocative question:

Is the absence of chiral vacua just a feature of the simple model considered by Buchmüller et al., or is it a more general problem?

Thank you very much!

GUT scale

vs.

string scale

GUT vs. string scale

e.g. Witten [1996]

- Supergravity description of heterotic string

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; -\int \mathsf{d}^{10}x\,\sqrt{g}\,g_s\left(\frac{4}{(\alpha')^4}\,R+\frac{1}{(\alpha')^3}\,\mathrm{tr}\,F^2+\dots\right)$$

$$g_s = \mathrm{e}^{-\phi}$$

$$\alpha' = \frac{1}{2\pi\,M_{\text{string}}^2}$$

GUT vs. string scale

e.g. Witten [1996]

- ☞ Supergravity description of heterotic string

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; -\int \mathrm{d}^{10}x\;\sqrt{g}\,g_s\,\left(\frac{4}{(\alpha')^4}\,R+\frac{1}{(\alpha')^3}\,\mathrm{tr}\,F^2+\dots\right)$$

curvature ↷ gravity

field strength ↷ gauge interactions

GUT vs. string scale

e.g. Witten [1996]

☞ Supergravity description of heterotic string

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; -\int \mathsf{d}^{10}x\,\sqrt{g}\,g_s\left(\frac{4}{(\alpha')^4}\,R+\frac{1}{(\alpha')^3}\,\mathrm{tr}\,F^2+\dots\right)$$

➥ Effective 4D action after compactification

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; -\int \mathsf{d}^{4}x\,\sqrt{g}\,\mathrm{e}^{-2\phi}\,V\left(\frac{4}{(\alpha')^4}\,R+\frac{1}{(\alpha')^3}\,\mathrm{tr}\,F^2+\dots\right)$$

6D volume

GUT vs. string scale

e.g. Witten [1996]

- ☞ Supergravity description of heterotic string

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; -\int \mathsf{d}^{10}x\;\sqrt{g}\,g_s\,\left(\frac{4}{(\alpha')^4}\,R+\frac{1}{(\alpha')^3}\,\mathrm{tr}\,F^2+\dots\right)$$

- ➥ Effective 4D action after compactification

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; -\int \mathsf{d}^{4}x\;\sqrt{g}\,\mathrm{e}^{-2\phi}\,V\,\left(\frac{4}{(\alpha')^4}\,R+\frac{1}{(\alpha')^3}\,\mathrm{tr}\,F^2+\dots\right)$$

- ➥ 4D Newton's constant and gauge coupling

$$G_\mathrm{N} \;=\; \frac{\mathrm{e}^{2\phi}\,(\alpha')^4}{64\pi\,V} \quad\text{and}\quad \alpha_\mathrm{GUT} \;=\; \frac{\mathrm{e}^{2\phi}\,(\alpha')^3}{16\pi\,V}$$

GUT vs. string scale

- ➥ 4D Newton's constant and gauge coupling

$$G_{\mathrm{N}} = \frac{\mathrm{e}^{2\phi}\,(\alpha')^4}{64\pi\,V} \quad \text{and} \quad \alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}} = \frac{\mathrm{e}^{2\phi}\,(\alpha')^3}{16\pi\,V}$$

GUT vs. string scale

- 4D Newton's constant and gauge coupling

$$G_{\mathrm{N}} = \frac{\mathrm{e}^{2\phi}\,(\alpha')^4}{64\pi\,V} \quad \text{and} \quad \alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}} = \frac{\mathrm{e}^{2\phi}\,(\alpha')^3}{16\pi\,V}$$

- Relation between Newton's constant and gauge coupling

$$G_{\mathrm{N}} = \frac{\alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}}\,\alpha'}{4} = \frac{\alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}}}{8\pi\,M_{\mathrm{string}}^2} \simeq \frac{1}{(24\,M_{\mathrm{string}})^2} \overset{!}{=} \frac{1}{M_{\mathrm{P}}^2}$$

GUT vs. string scale

- ➥ 4D Newton's constant and gauge coupling

$$G_{\mathrm{N}} = \frac{\mathrm{e}^{2\phi}\,(\alpha')^4}{64\pi\,V} \quad \text{and} \quad \alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}} = \frac{\mathrm{e}^{2\phi}\,(\alpha')^3}{16\pi\,V}$$

- ➥ Relation between Newton's constant and gauge coupling

$$G_{\mathrm{N}} = \frac{\alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}}\,\alpha'}{4} = \frac{\alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}}}{8\pi\,M_{\mathrm{string}}^2} \simeq \frac{1}{(24\,M_{\mathrm{string}})^2} \overset{!}{=} \frac{1}{M_{\mathrm{P}}^2}$$

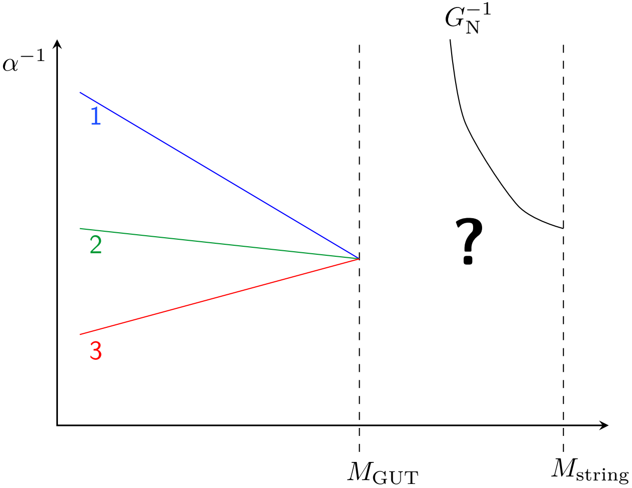
- ➥ Well–known problem: using $\alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}} = g_{\mathrm{GUT}}^2/4\pi \simeq 1/25$

$$M_{\mathrm{string}} \simeq 9\cdot 10^{17}\,\mathrm{GeV} \quad \text{and} \quad M_{\mathrm{GUT}} \simeq (2-3)\cdot 10^{16}\,\mathrm{GeV}$$

$$\curvearrowright \frac{M_{\mathrm{string}}}{M_{\mathrm{GUT}}} \sim 30\dots 40$$

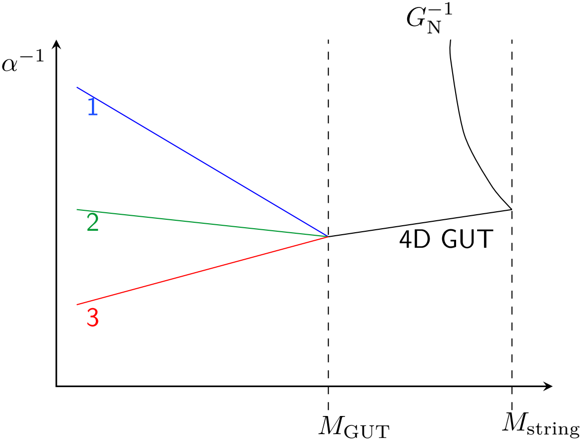
Gauge unification: GUT vs. string scale

cf. Dienes [1997]



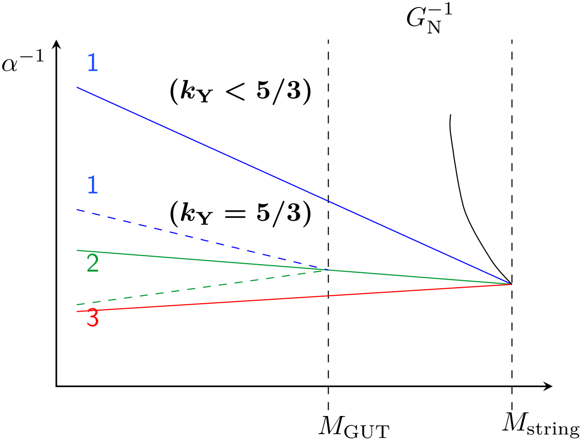
Gauge unification: 4D GUT picture

cf. Dienes [1997]



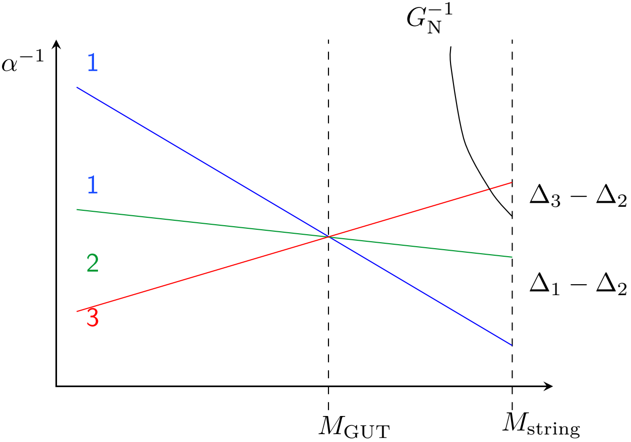
Gauge unification: changing hypercharge normalization

cf. Ibáñez [1993]



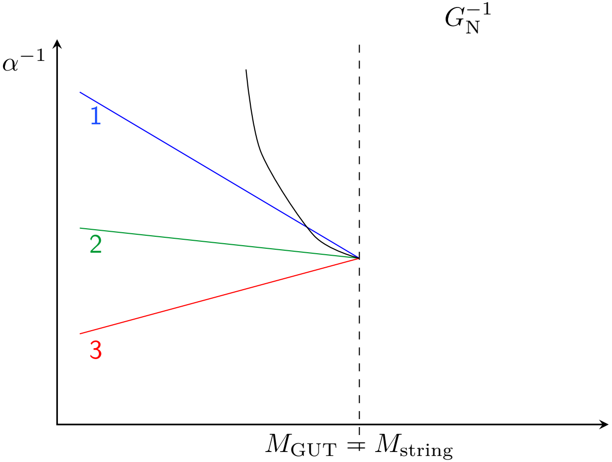
Gauge unification: string thresholds

cf. Nilles & Stieberger [1997]



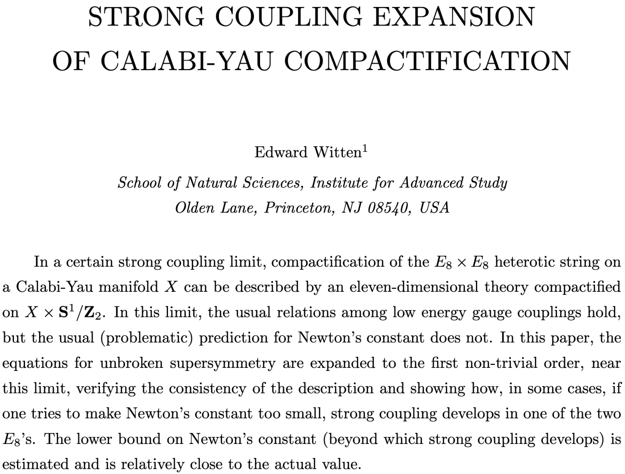
Gauge unification: M–theory or type I string

Witten [1996]



GUT vs. string scale: M–theory

Witten [1996]



STRONG COUPLING EXPANSION OF CALABI-YAU COMPACTIFICATION

Edward Witten[1]

School of Natural Sciences, Institute for Advanced Study
Olden Lane, Princeton, NJ 08540, USA

In a certain strong coupling limit, compactification of the $E_8 \times E_8$ heterotic string on a Calabi-Yau manifold X can be described by an eleven-dimensional theory compactified on $X \times \mathbf{S}^1/\mathbf{Z}_2$. In this limit, the usual relations among low energy gauge couplings hold, but the usual (problematic) prediction for Newton's constant does not. In this paper, the equations for unbroken supersymmetry are expanded to the first non-trivial order, near this limit, verifying the consistency of the description and showing how, in some cases, if one tries to make Newton's constant too small, strong coupling develops in one of the two E_8's. The lower bound on Newton's constant (beyond which strong coupling develops) is estimated and is relatively close to the actual value.

Anisotropic compactifications

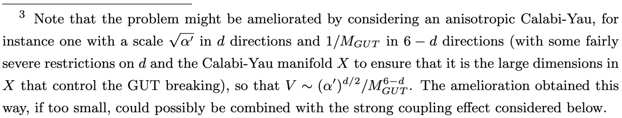
- ☞ However, Witten also mentions in a footnote

---

[3] Note that the problem might be ameliorated by considering an anisotropic Calabi-Yau, for instance one with a scale $\sqrt{\alpha'}$ in d directions and $1/M_{GUT}$ in $6-d$ directions (with some fairly severe restrictions on d and the Calabi-Yau manifold X to ensure that it is the large dimensions in X that control the GUT breaking), so that $V \sim (\alpha')^{d/2}/M_{GUT}^{6-d}$. The amelioration obtained this way, if too small, could possibly be combined with the strong coupling effect considered below.

Anisotropic compactifications

- However, Witten also mentions in a footnote



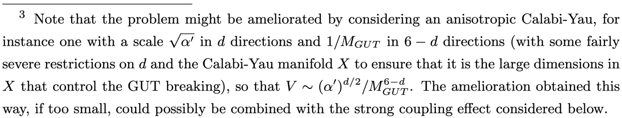
---

[3] Note that the problem might be ameliorated by considering an anisotropic Calabi-Yau, for instance one with a scale $\sqrt{\alpha'}$ in d directions and $1/M_{GUT}$ in $6-d$ directions (with some fairly severe restrictions on d and the Calabi-Yau manifold X to ensure that it is the large dimensions in X that control the GUT breaking), so that $V \sim (\alpha')^{d/2}/M_{GUT}^{6-d}$. The amelioration obtained this way, if too small, could possibly be combined with the strong coupling effect considered below.

- Anisotropic compactification

Anisotropic compactifications

- However, Witten also mentions in a footnote



---

[3] Note that the problem might be ameliorated by considering an anisotropic Calabi-Yau, for instance one with a scale $\sqrt{\alpha'}$ in d directions and $1/M_{GUT}$ in $6-d$ directions (with some fairly severe restrictions on d and the Calabi-Yau manifold X to ensure that it is the large dimensions in X that control the GUT breaking), so that $V \sim (\alpha')^{d/2}/M_{GUT}^{6-d}$. The amelioration obtained this way, if too small, could possibly be combined with the strong coupling effect considered below.

- Anisotropic compactification
- Need string (rather than supergravity) description!

Orbifold GUT limits

- ☞ Anisotropic compactification may mitigate the discrepancy between M_{GUT} and M_{string}

Witten [1996]
...
Hebecker & Trapletti [2005]

Orbifold GUT limits

☞ Anisotropic compactification may mitigate the discrepancy between M_{GUT} and M_{string}

Witten [1996]
...
Hebecker & Trapletti [2005]

☞ For example

$$\frac{\alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}}}{2} = \frac{g_{\mathrm{het}}^2}{(R\,m_{\mathrm{het}})^6} \to \frac{g_{\mathrm{het}}^2}{(R_{\mathrm{large}}\,m_{\mathrm{het}})\,(R_{\mathrm{small}}\,m_{\mathrm{het}})^5}$$

. . . works if $R_{\mathrm{large}}\,m_{\mathrm{het}} \sim 50$ or $R_{\mathrm{large}}^{-1} \sim 3 \cdot 10^{16}\,\mathrm{GeV}$

suspiciously close to M_{GUT}

Orbifold GUT limits

- ☞ Anisotropic compactification may mitigate the discrepancy between M_{GUT} and M_{string}

Witten [1996]
. . .
Hebecker & Trapletti [2005]

- ☞ For example

$$\frac{\alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}}}{2} = \frac{g_{\mathrm{het}}^2}{(R\,m_{\mathrm{het}})^6} \to \frac{g_{\mathrm{het}}^2}{(R_{\mathrm{large}}\,m_{\mathrm{het}})\,(R_{\mathrm{small}}\,m_{\mathrm{het}})^5}$$

. . . works if $R_{\mathrm{large}}\,m_{\mathrm{het}} \sim 50$ or $R_{\mathrm{large}}^{-1} \sim 3 \cdot 10^{16}\,\mathrm{GeV}$

- ☞ Hebecker & Trapletti are a bit sceptical but their bound may be a bit too conservative (volume of orbifold $\neq$ volume of torus)

Orbifold GUT limits

- ☞ Anisotropic compactification may mitigate the discrepancy between M_{GUT} and M_{string}

Witten [1996]
...
Hebecker & Trapletti [2005]

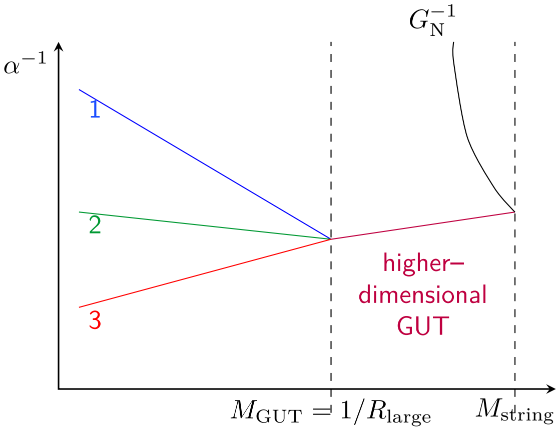
- ☞ For example

$$\frac{\alpha_{\mathrm{GUT}}}{2} = \frac{g_{\mathrm{het}}^2}{(R\,m_{\mathrm{het}})^6} \to \frac{g_{\mathrm{het}}^2}{(R_{\mathrm{large}}\,m_{\mathrm{het}})\,(R_{\mathrm{small}}\,m_{\mathrm{het}})^5}$$

... works if $R_{\mathrm{large}}\,m_{\mathrm{het}} \sim 50$ or $R_{\mathrm{large}}^{-1} \sim 3 \cdot 10^{16}\,\mathrm{GeV}$

- ☞ Hebecker & Trapletti are a bit sceptical but their bound may be a bit too conservative (volume of orbifold ≠ volume of torus)
- ☞ In any case we need a complete string model in order to deal with the smaller directions

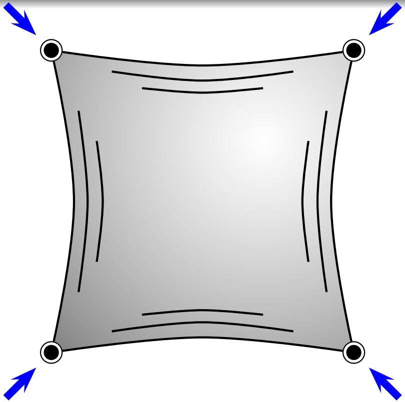
Gauge unification: orbifold GUT picture



Orbifold

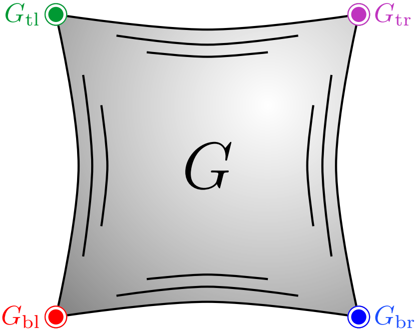
basics

What is an orbifold?



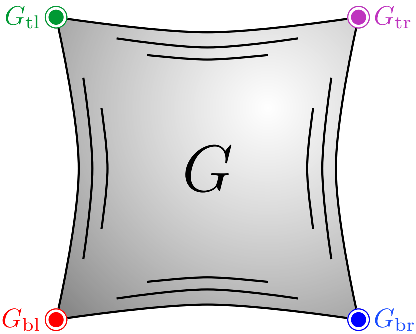
☞ an orbifold is a space which is smooth/flat everywhere except for special (orbifold fixed) points

What is an orbifold?



- ☞ an orbifold is a space which is smooth/flat everywhere except for special (orbifold fixed) points
- ☞ 'bulk' gauge symmetry G is broken to (different) subgroups (local GUTs) at the fixed points

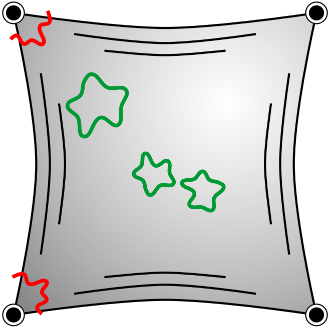
What is an orbifold?



- ☞ an orbifold is a space which is smooth/flat everywhere except for special (orbifold fixed) points
- ☞ 'bulk' gauge symmetry G is broken to (different) subgroups (local GUTs) at the fixed points
- ☞ low–energy gauge group : $G_{\text{low}-\text{energy}} = G_{\text{bl}} \cap G_{\text{br}} \cap G_{\text{tl}} \cap G_{\text{tr}}$

Strings on orbifolds

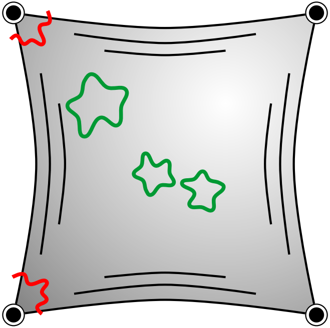
heterotic string	field theory
untwisted sector = strings closed on the torus	extra components of gauge fields
‘twisted’ sectors = strings which are only closed on the orbifold	‘brane fields’ (hard to understand in field–theoretical framework)



☞ (‘brane’) Fields living at a fixed point with a certain symmetry appear as complete multiplet of that symmetry

Strings on orbifolds

heterotic string	field theory
untwisted sector = strings closed on the torus	extra components of gauge fields
'twisted' sectors = strings which are only closed on the orbifold	'brane fields' (hard to understand in field–theoretical framework)



- ☞ ('brane') Fields living at a fixed point with a certain symmetry appear as complete multiplet of that symmetry
- ➥ e.g. if the electron lives at a point with SO(10) symmetry also u and d quarks live there

Some comments on orbifold history

- ☞ Very first stringy model of particle physics based on $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold

  Ibáñez, Kim, Nilles & Quevedo [1987]

Some comments on orbifold history

- ☞ Very first stringy model of particle physics based on $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold

  Ibáñez, Kim, Nilles & Quevedo [1987]

- ☞ Models with hierarchical Yukawa couplings and a realistic top mass

  e.g. Faraggi [1992]

Some comments on orbifold history

- ☞ Very first stringy model of particle physics based on $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold

  Ibáñez, Kim, Nilles & Quevedo [1987]

- ☞ Models with hierarchical Yukawa couplings and a realistic top mass

  e.g. Faraggi [1992]

- ☞ 3–generation standard like models with hypercharge in GUT normalization

  e.g. Dienes & Faraggi [1995]

Some comments on orbifold history

- ☞ Very first stringy model of particle physics based on $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold

  Ibáñez, Kim, Nilles & Quevedo [1987]

- ☞ Models with hierarchical Yukawa couplings and a realistic top mass

  e.g. Faraggi [1992]

- ☞ 3–generation standard like models with hypercharge in GUT normalization

  e.g. Dienes & Faraggi [1995]

- ☞ Promising Pati–Salam models on the $\mathbb{Z}_3 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold and orbifold GUT interpretation

  Kobayashi, Raby & Zhang [2004], Förste, Nilles, Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2004], Kobayashi, Raby & Zhang [2005]

Some comments on orbifold history

- ☞ Very first stringy model of particle physics based on $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold

  Ibáñez, Kim, Nilles & Quevedo [1987]

- ☞ Models with hierarchical Yukawa couplings and a realistic top mass

  e.g. Faraggi [1992]

- ☞ 3–generation standard like models with hypercharge in GUT normalization

  e.g. Dienes & Faraggi [1995]

- ☞ Promising Pati–Salam models on the $\mathbb{Z}_3 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold and orbifold GUT interpretation

  Kobayashi, Raby & Zhang [2004], Förste, Nilles, Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2004], Kobayashi, Raby & Zhang [2005]

- ☞ MSSM models with qualitatively realistic fermion masses and R parity

  Buchmüller, Hamaguchi, Lebedev & M.R. [2006], Lebedev, Nilles, Raby, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2007a]
  Lebedev, Nilles, Raby, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2007b]
  Buchmüller, Hamaguchi, Lebedev, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2007]

Some comments on orbifold history

☞ Very first stringy model of particle physics based on $\mathbb{Z}_3$ orbifold

Ibáñez, Kim, Nilles & Quevedo [1987]

☞ Models with hierarchical Yukawa couplings and a realistic top mass

e.g. Faraggi [1992]

☞ 3–generation standard like models with hypercharge in GUT normalization

e.g. Dienes & Faraggi [1995]

☞ Promising Pati–Salam models on the $\mathbb{Z}_3 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold and orbifold GUT interpretation

Kobayashi, Raby & Zhang [2004], Förste, Nilles, Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2004], Kobayashi, Raby & Zhang [2005]

☞ MSSM models with qualitatively realistic fermion masses and R parity

Buchmüller, Hamaguchi, Lebedev & M.R. [2006], Lebedev, Nilles, Raby, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2007a]
Lebedev, Nilles, Raby, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2007b]
Buchmüller, Hamaguchi, Lebedev, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2007]

☞ A rather common concern in many models: fractionally charged vector–like exotics

Non–local
GUT breaking

Orbifolds & Wilson lines

Ibáñez, Nilles & Quevedo [1987], Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a]

skip

☞ Local gauge embedding at fixed point f

$$V_f^I \;=\; k\,V_N^I + m_\alpha\,W_{n\alpha}^I$$

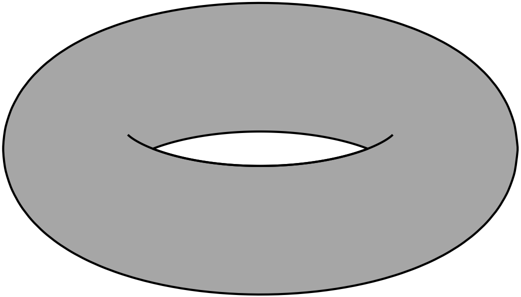
Orbifolds & Wilson lines

Ibáñez, Nilles & Quevedo [1987], Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a]

▸ skip

- Local gauge embedding at fixed point f

$$V_f^I \;=\; k\,V_N^I + m_\alpha\,W_{n\alpha}^I$$



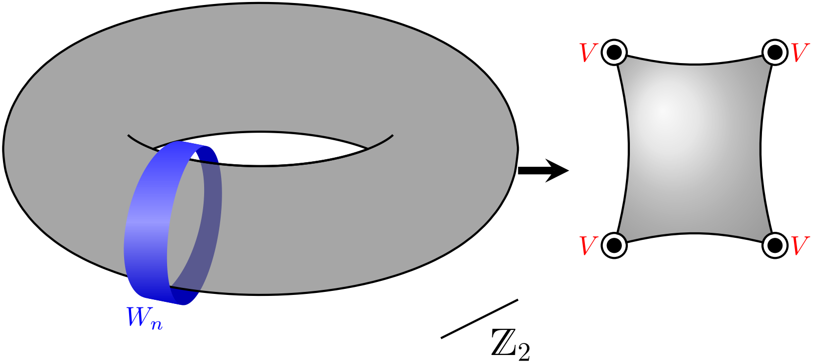
- Upshot: so–called discrete Wilson lines are differences between local shifts (and *not* Wilson lines in the usual sense)

Orbifolds & Wilson lines

Ibáñez, Nilles & Quevedo [1987], Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a] ▸ skip

☞ Local gauge embedding at fixed point f

$$V_f^I \;=\; k\,V_N^I + m_\alpha\,W_{n\alpha}^I$$



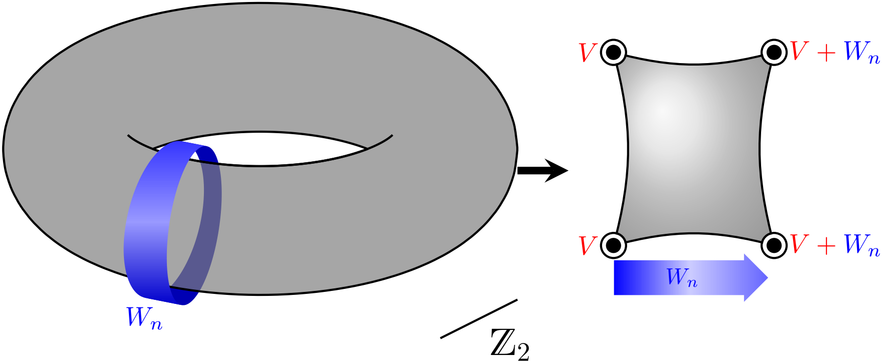
Orbifolds & Wilson lines

Ibáñez, Nilles & Quevedo [1987], Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a]

▸ skip

☞ Local gauge embedding at fixed point f

$$V_f^I \;=\; k\,V_N^I + m_\alpha\,W_{n\alpha}^I$$



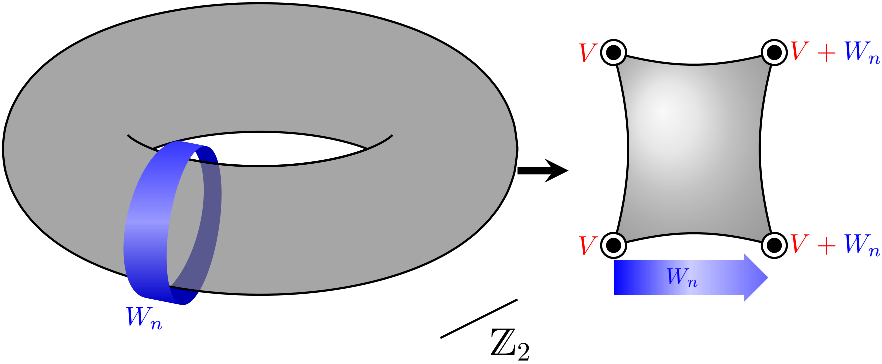
Orbifolds & Wilson lines

Ibáñez, Nilles & Quevedo [1987], Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a]

▸ skip

☞ Local gauge embedding at fixed point f

$$V_f^I \;=\; k\,V_N^I + m_\alpha\,W_{n\alpha}^I$$

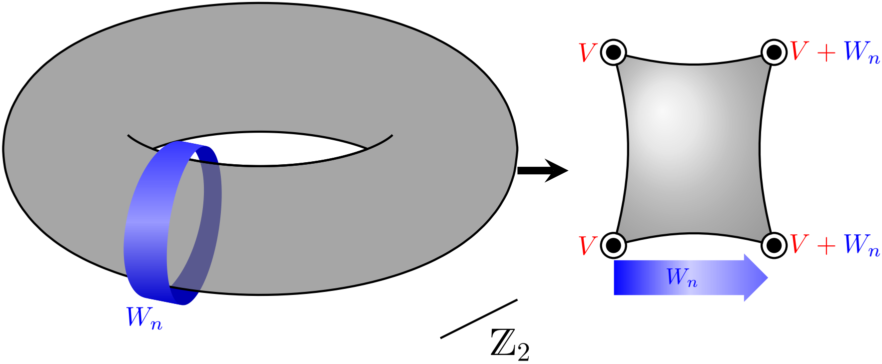


Orbifolds & Wilson lines

Ibáñez, Nilles & Quevedo [1987], Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a] ▸ skip

- ☞ Local gauge embedding at fixed point f

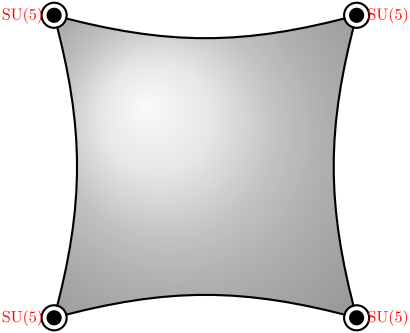
$$V_f^I \;=\; k\,V_N^I + m_\alpha\,W_{n\alpha}^I$$



- ☞ Upshot: so–called discrete Wilson lines are differences between local shifts (and *not* Wilson lines in the usual sense)

Local vs. non–local GUT breaking

Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a], Hebecker [2004]

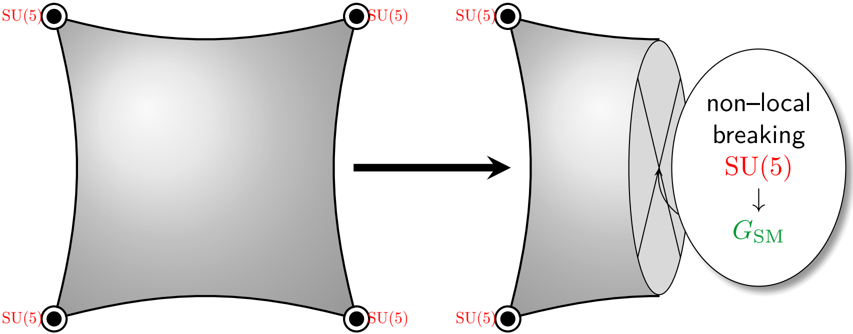


❶ step: construct $\mathbb{T}^2/\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold which breaks $\mathrm{SU}(6)$ locally to $\mathrm{SU}(5)$

$$\mathbb{Z}_2 \quad : \quad (x_5, x_6) \;\to\; (-x_5, -x_6)$$

Local vs. non–local GUT breaking

Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a], Hebecker [2004]



❶ step: construct $\mathbb{T}^2/\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold which breaks $\mathrm{SU}(6)$ locally to $\mathrm{SU}(5)$

❷ step: mod out a freely acting $\mathbb{Z}_2'$ symmetry which breaks $\mathrm{SU}(5) \to \mathrm{SU}(3)_C \times \mathrm{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_Y$

$$\mathbb{Z}_2' \quad : \quad (x_5, x_6) \;\to\; (-x_5 + \pi\, R_5, -x_6 + \pi\, R_6)$$

Orbifold

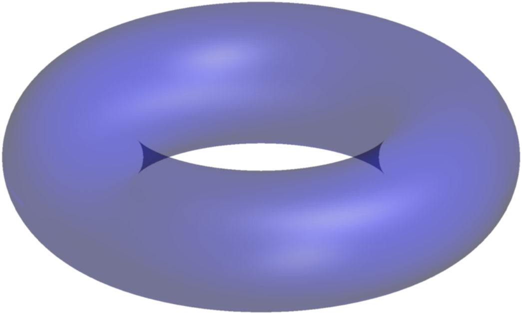
compactifications

of the

heterotic string

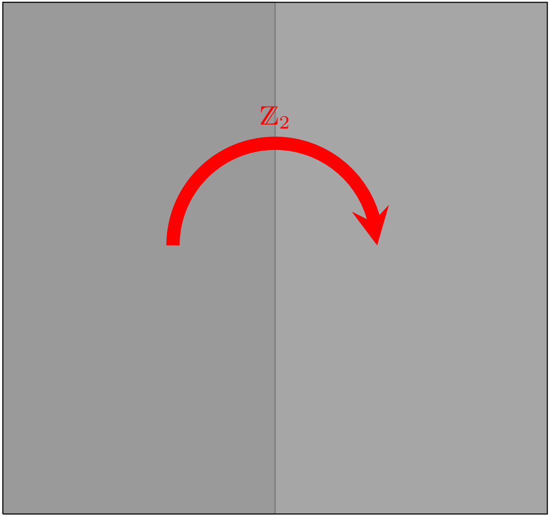
$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow

- ☞ Starting point: torus

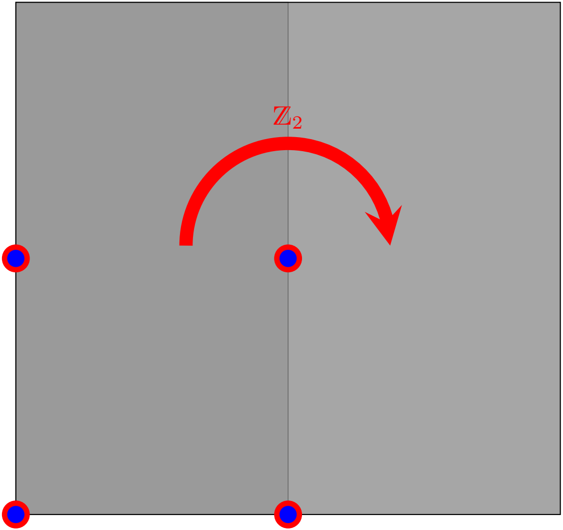


$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow

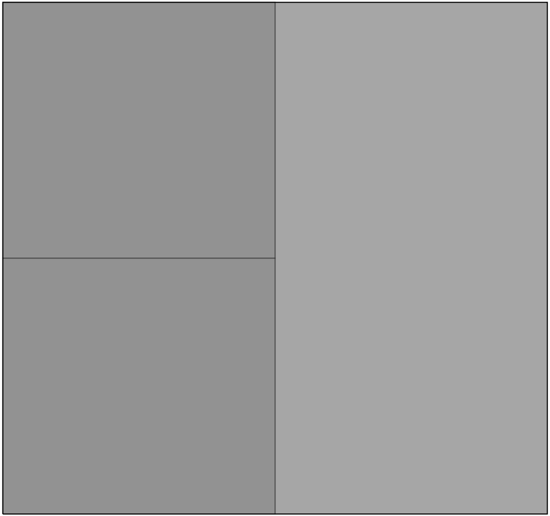
$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow

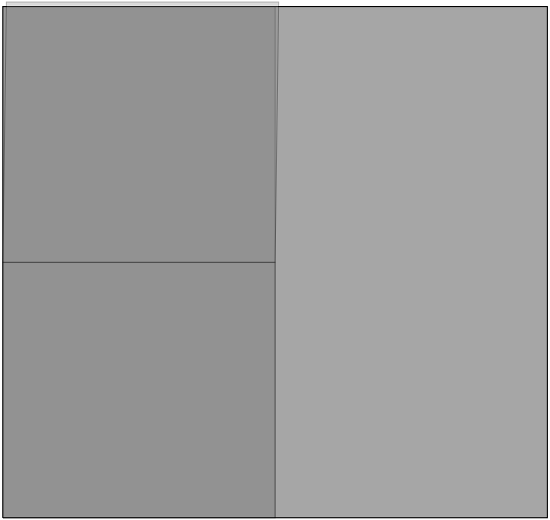


$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



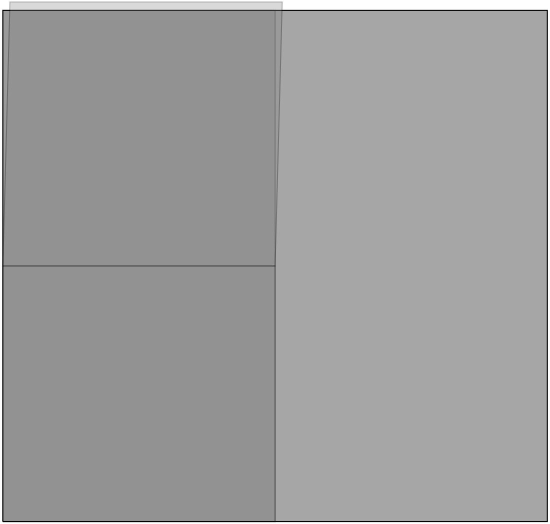
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



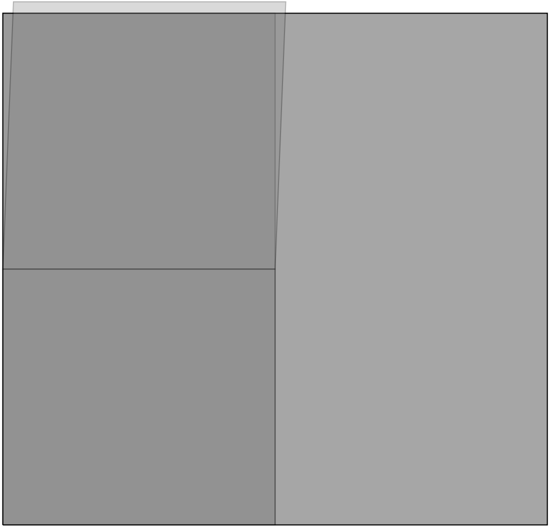
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



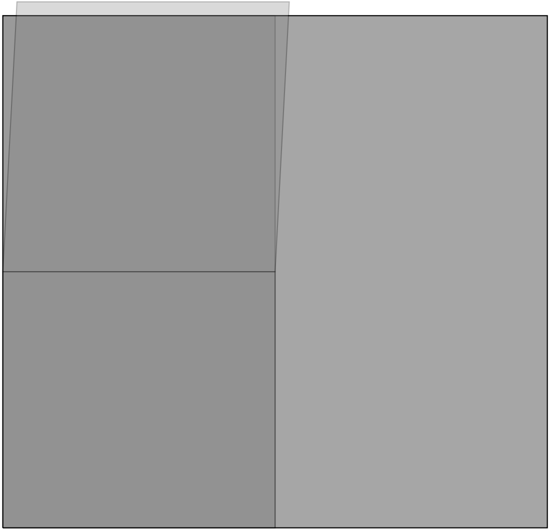
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



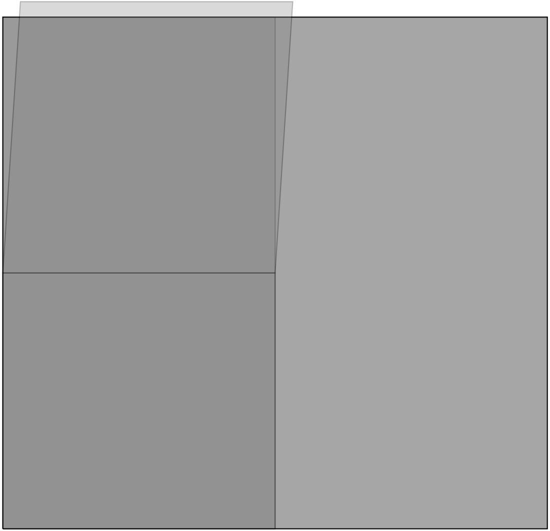
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



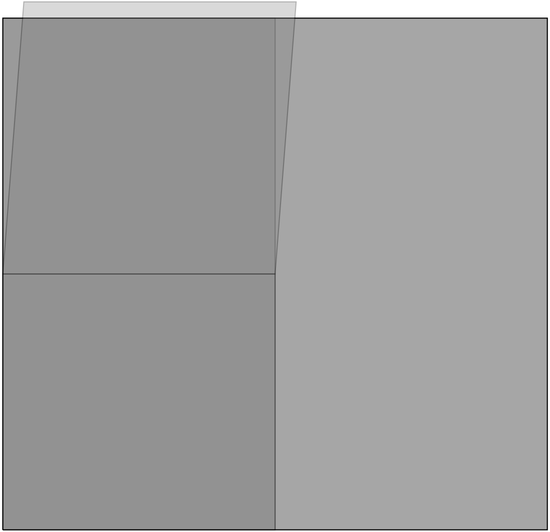
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



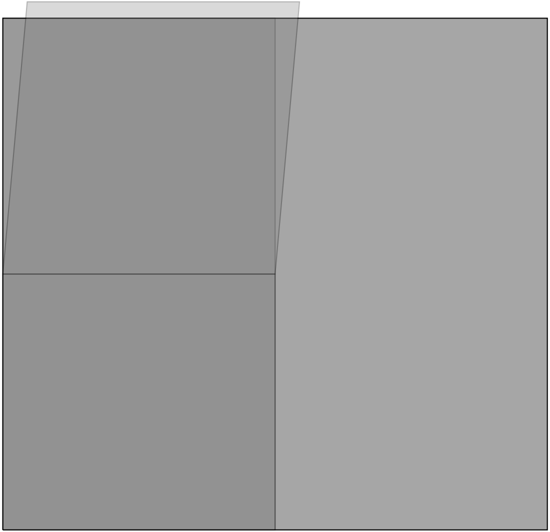
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow

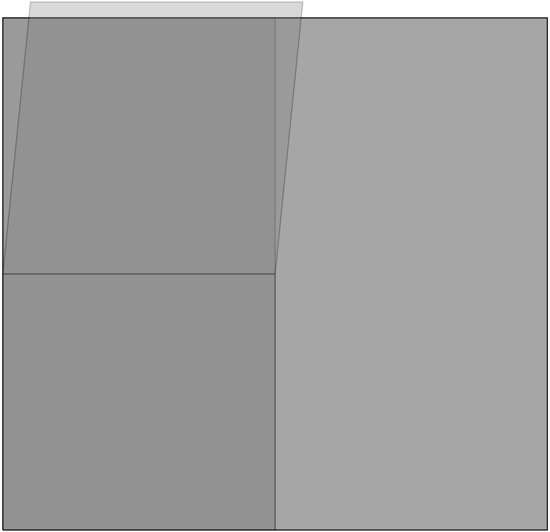


back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow

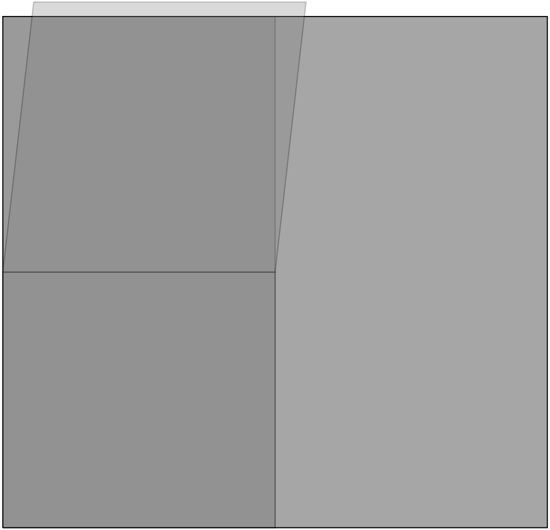


$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



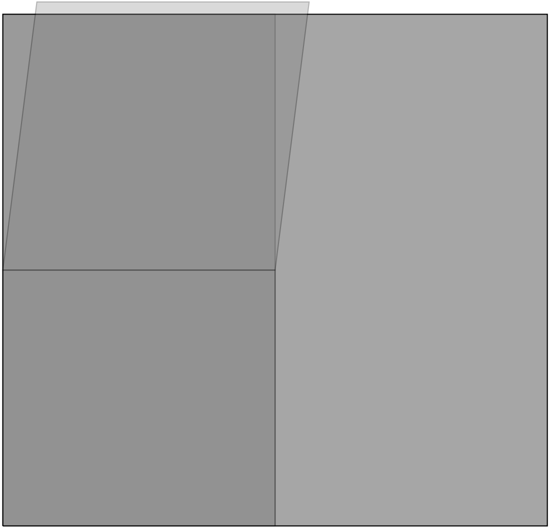
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



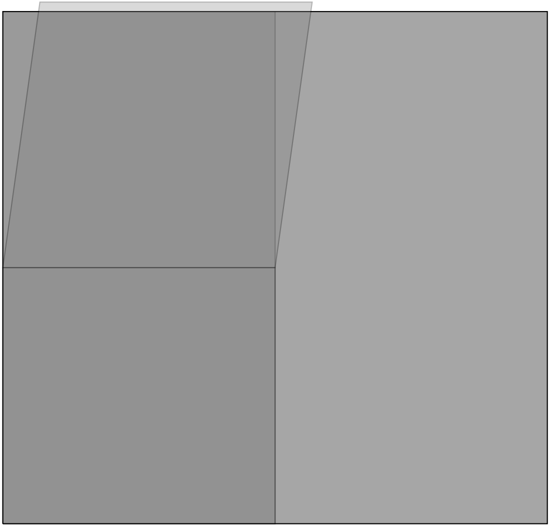
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



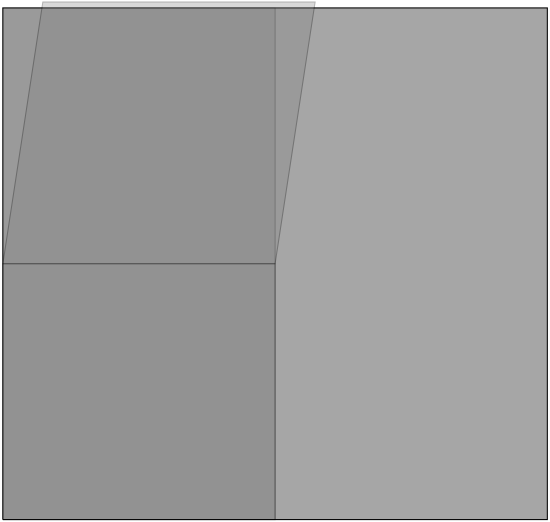
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



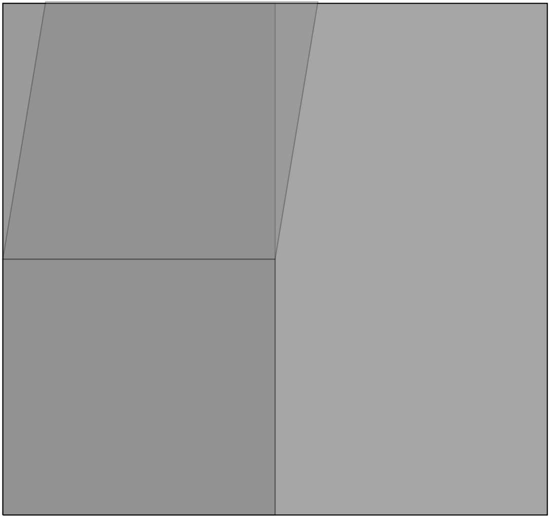
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



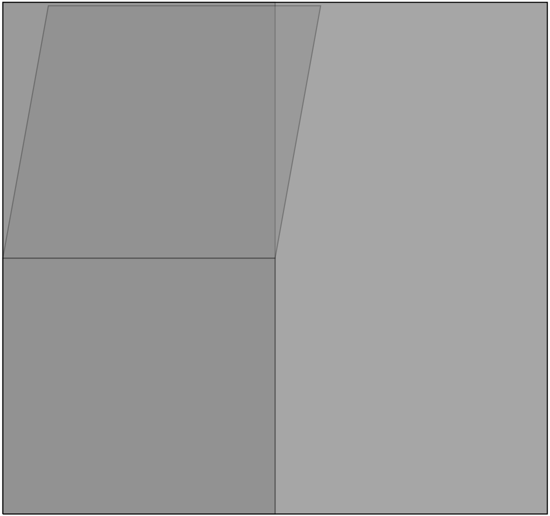
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



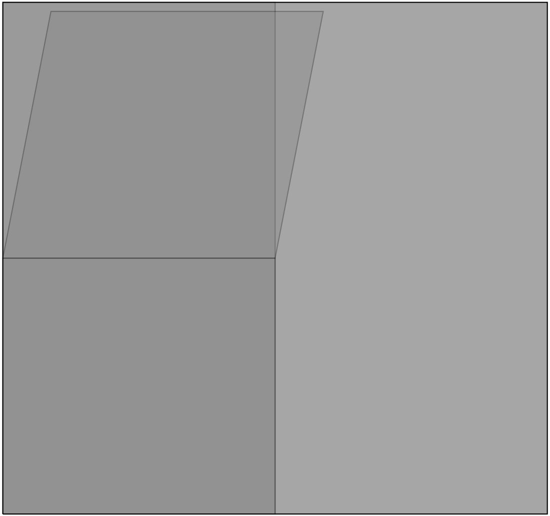
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



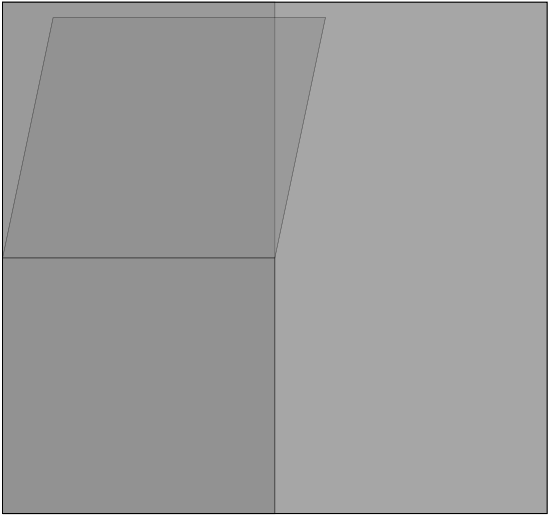
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



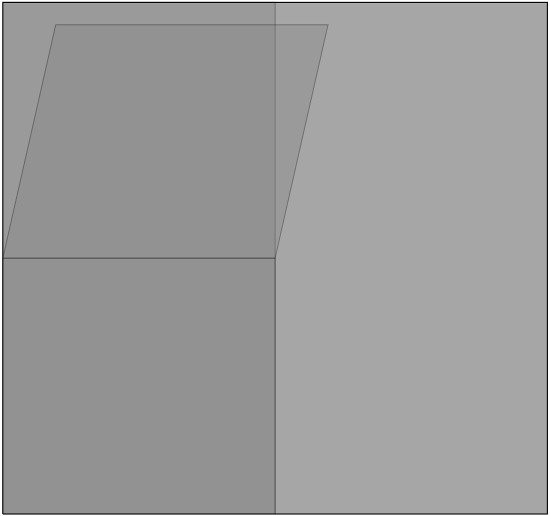
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



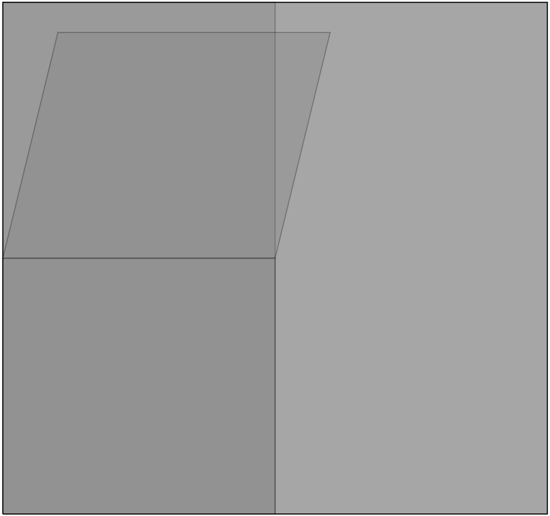
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



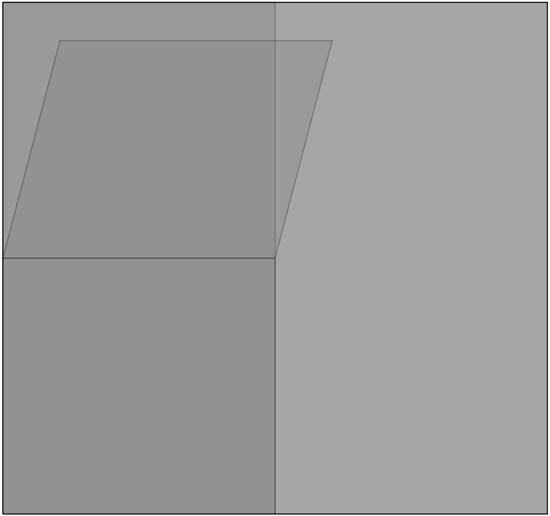
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



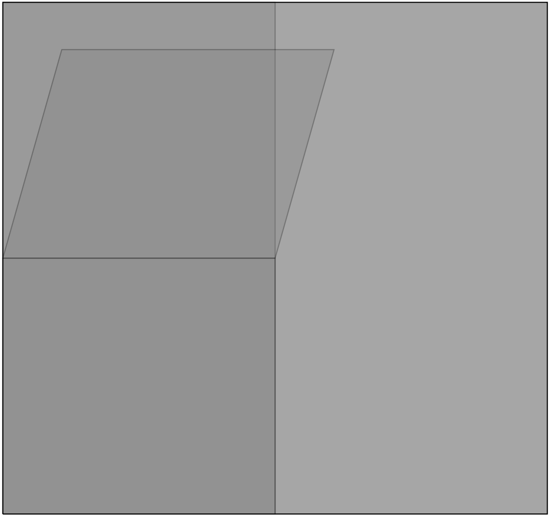
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



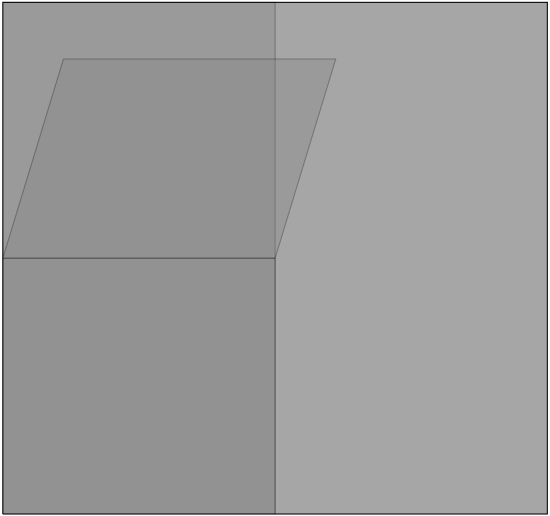
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



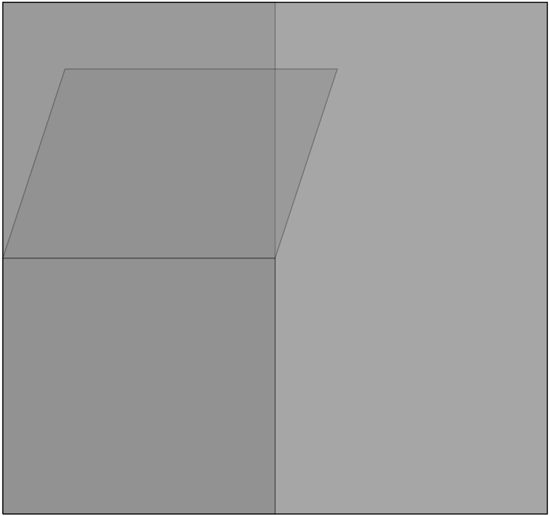
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



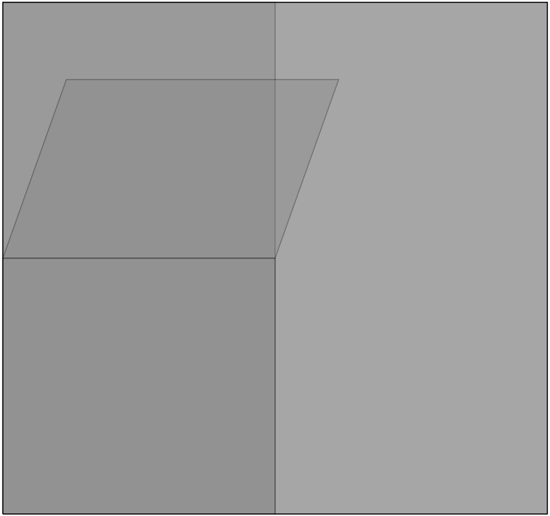
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



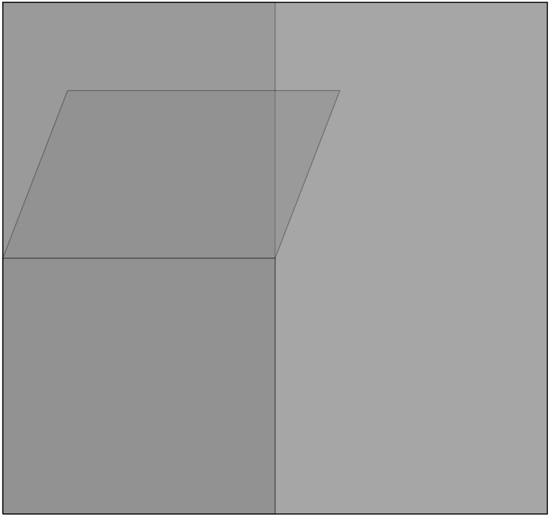
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



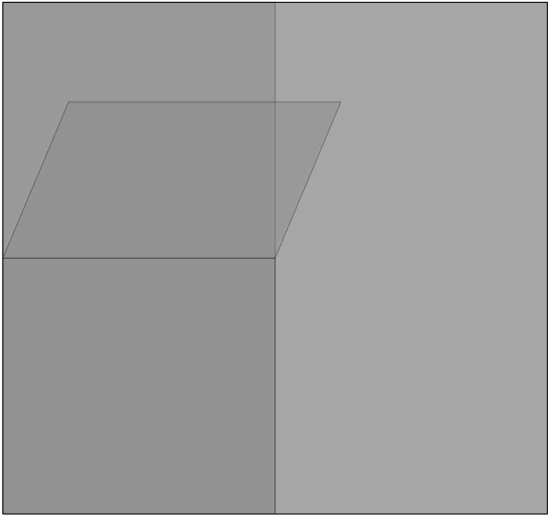
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow

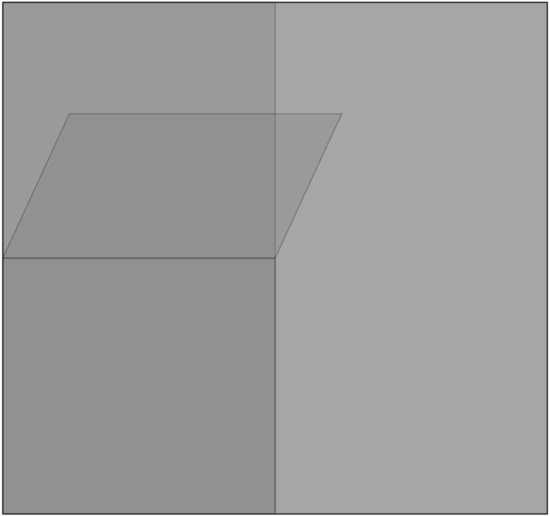


▶ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow

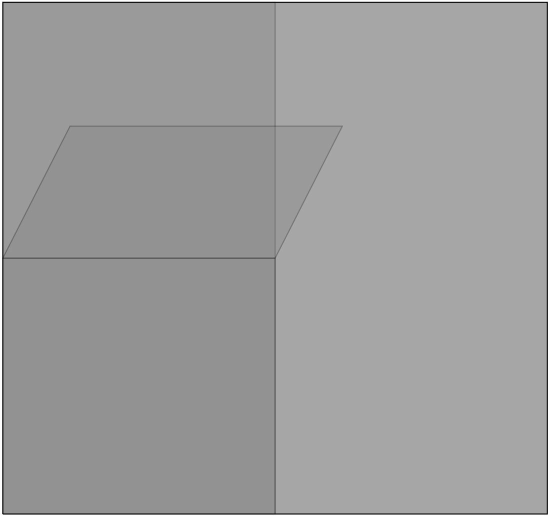


$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



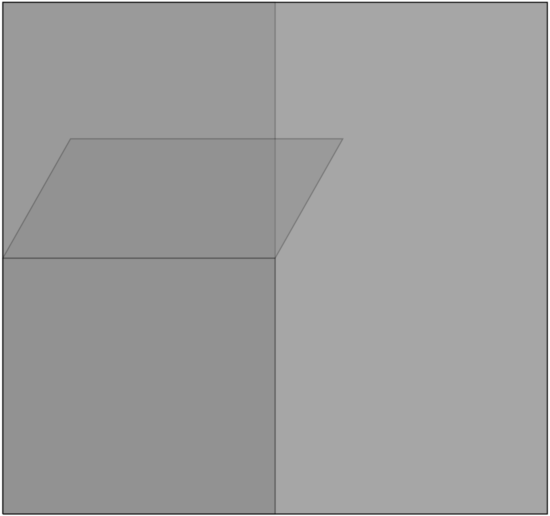
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



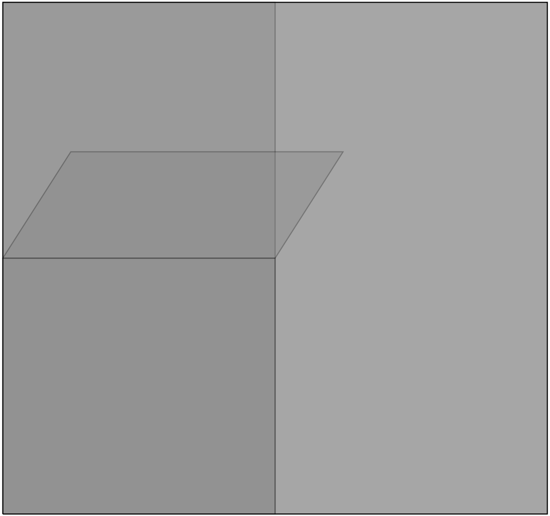
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



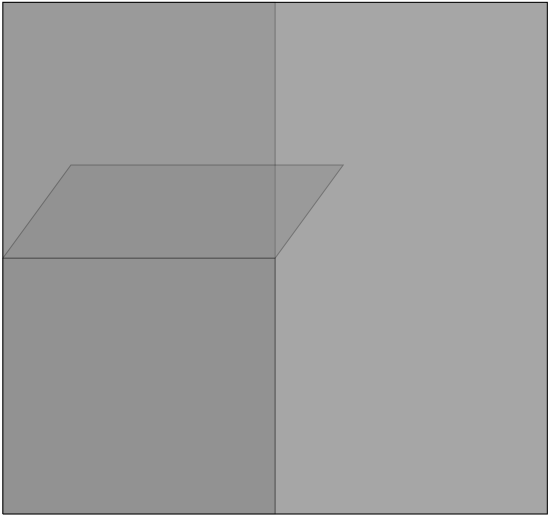
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



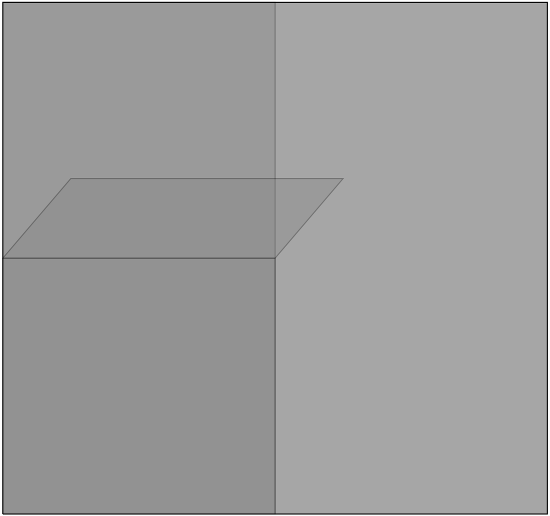
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



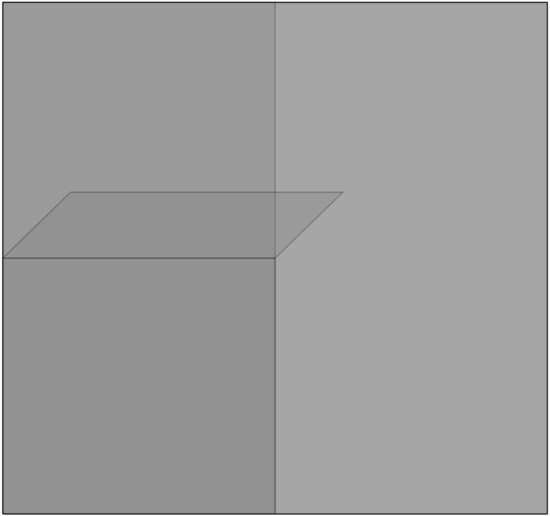
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



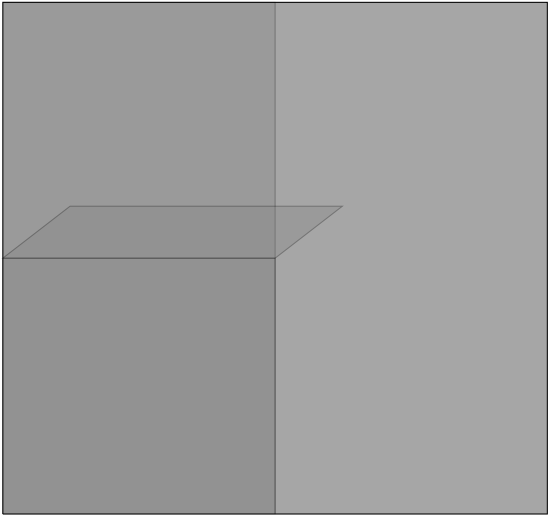
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



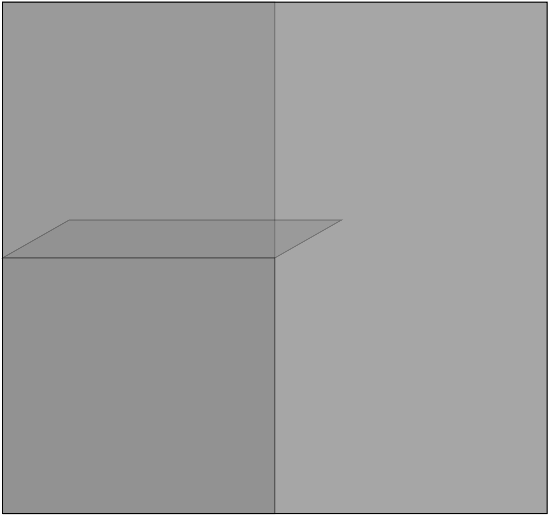
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



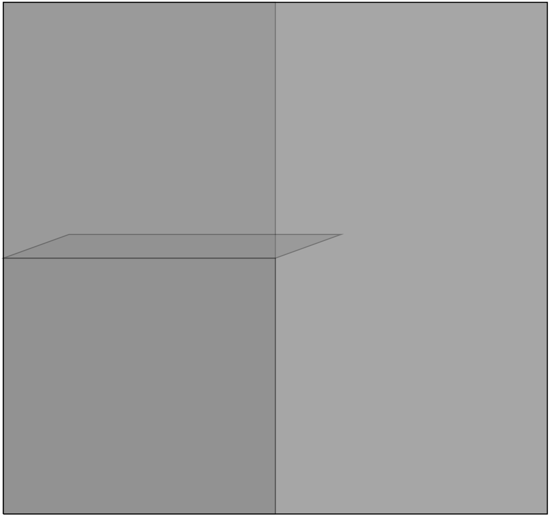
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



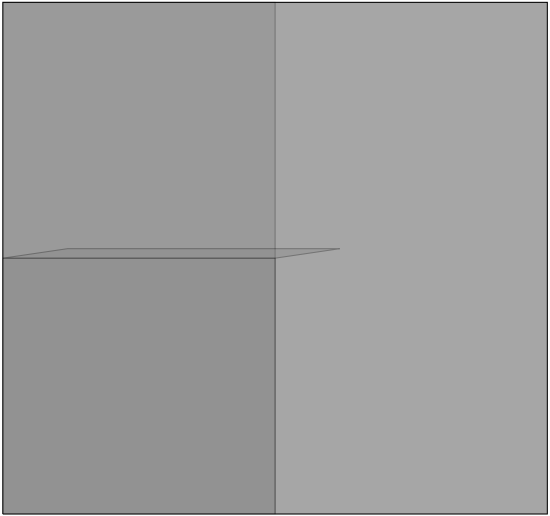
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



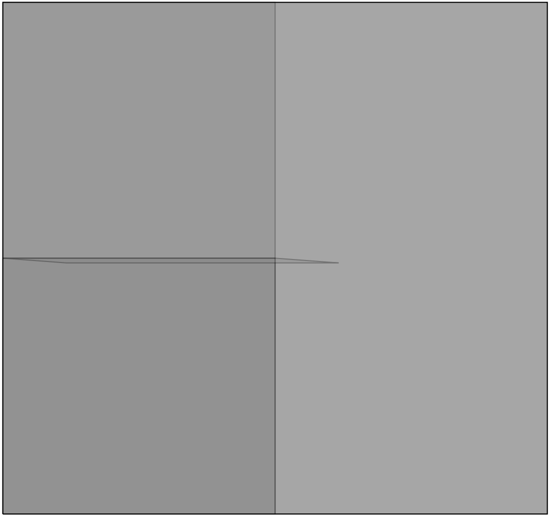
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



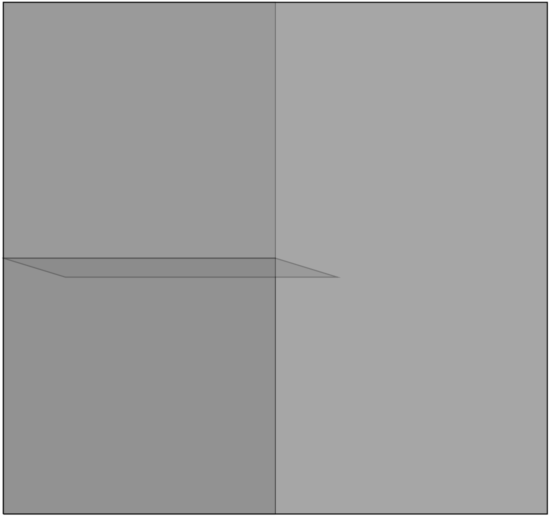
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



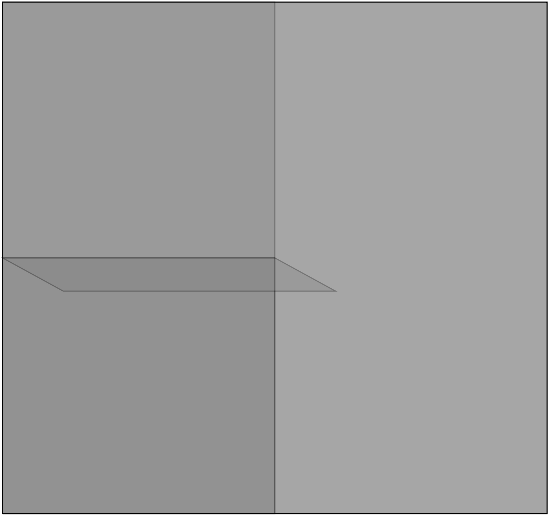
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



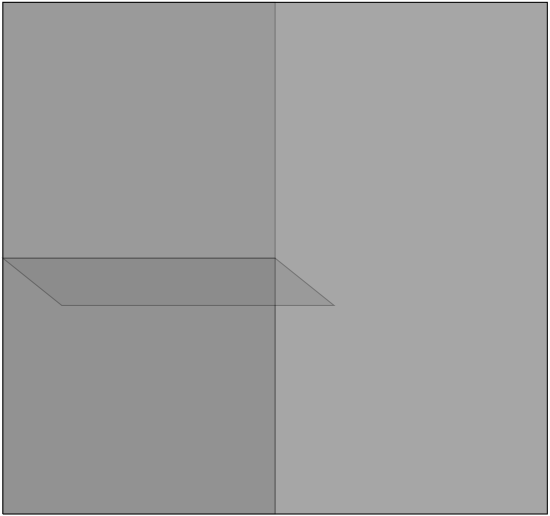
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



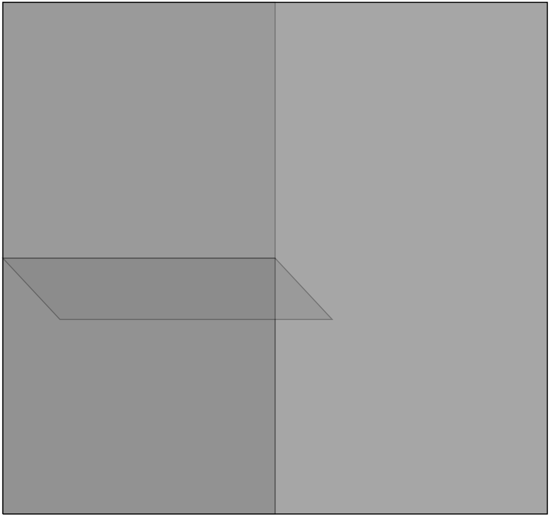
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



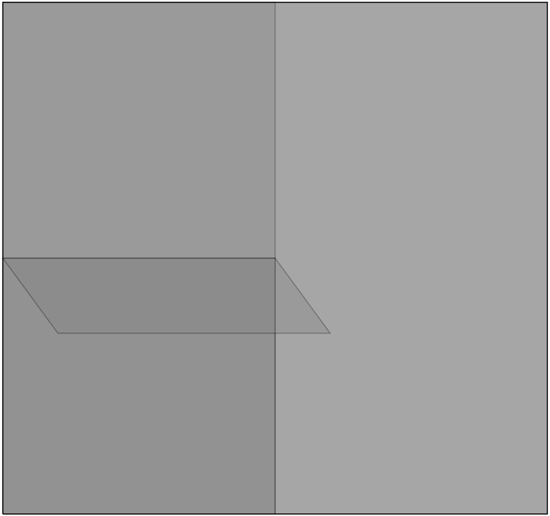
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



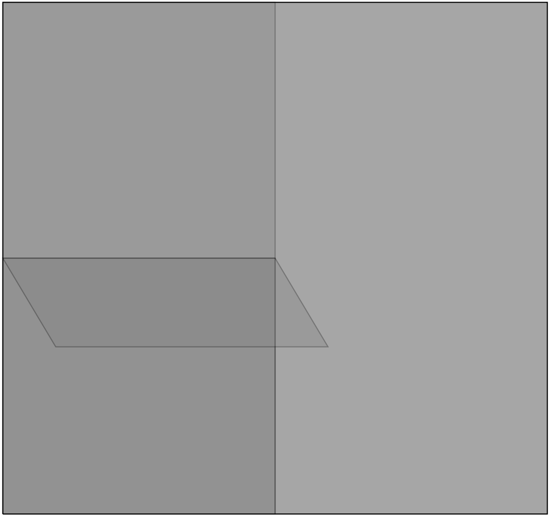
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



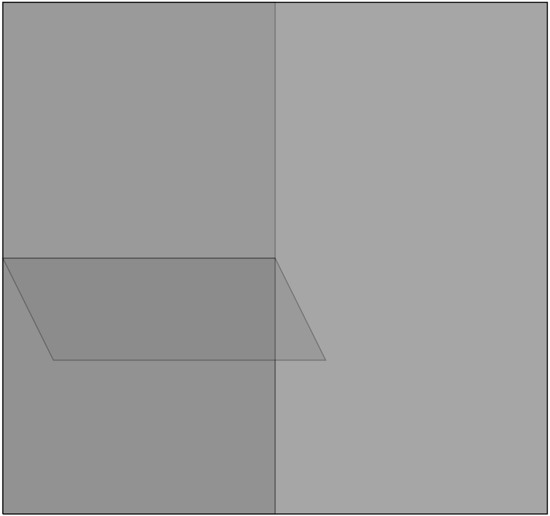
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



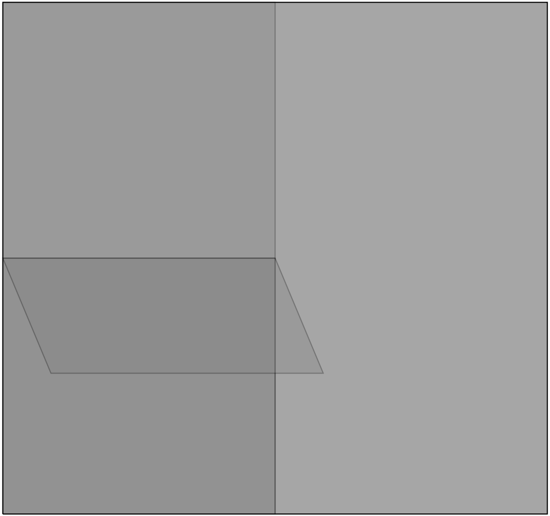
back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



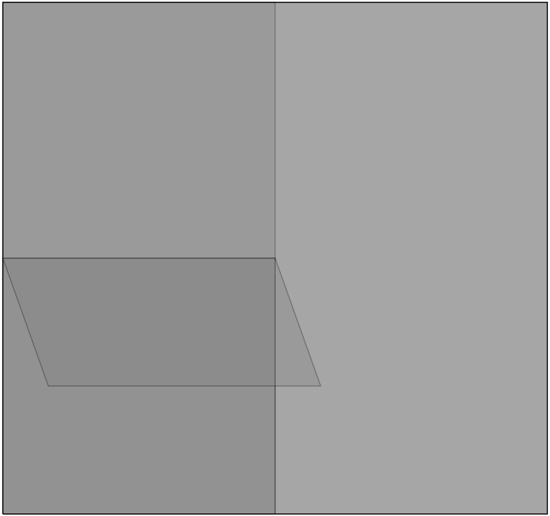
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



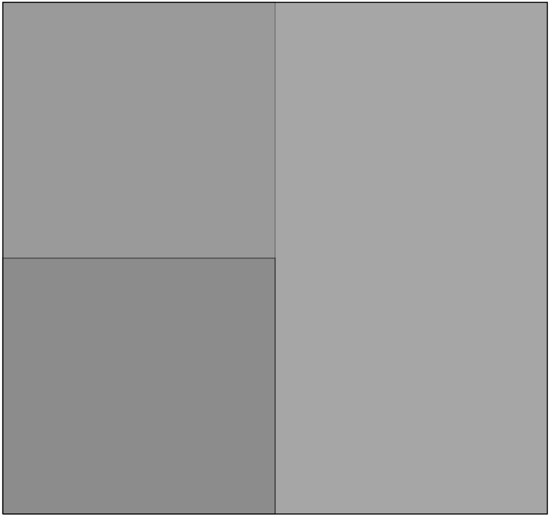
▸ back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



back

$\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold pillow



▸ back

Orbifold classification in the past and current status

- ☞ First attempts to classify symmetric heterotic toroidal orbifolds focused on Lie lattices

Bailin & Love [1999]

Orbifold classification in the past and current status

- ☞ First attempts to classify symmetric heterotic toroidal orbifolds focused on Lie lattices

  Bailin & Love [1999]

- ☞ A more complete classification of the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold showed that there were many more possibilities than initially appreciated

  Förste, Kobayashi, Ohki & Takahashi [2006], Dillies [2007], Donagi & Wendland [2009]

Orbifold classification in the past and current status

- ☞ First attempts to classify symmetric heterotic toroidal orbifolds focused on Lie lattices

  Bailin & Love [1999]

- ☞ A more complete classification of the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold showed that there were many more possibilities than initially appreciated

  Förste, Kobayashi, Ohki & Takahashi [2006], Dillies [2007], Donagi & Wendland [2009]

- ☞ However, the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ classification was not entirely complete, and there are many more examples in of $\mathbb{Z}_N \times \mathbb{Z}_M$ orbifolds yielding $\mathbb{Z}_N \times \mathbb{Z}_M$ orbifolds that have been missed previously

  Fischer, M.R., Torrado & Vaudrevange [2013b]

Orbifold classification in the past and current status

- ☞ First attempts to classify symmetric heterotic toroidal orbifolds focused on Lie lattices

  Bailin & Love [1999]

- ☞ A more complete classification of the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold showed that there were many more possibilities than initially appreciated

  Förste, Kobayashi, Ohki & Takahashi [2006], Dillies [2007], Donagi & Wendland [2009]

- ☞ However, the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ classification was not entirely complete, and there are many more examples in of $\mathbb{Z}_N \times \mathbb{Z}_M$ orbifolds yielding $\mathbb{Z}_N \times \mathbb{Z}_M$ orbifolds that have been missed previously

  Fischer, M.R., Torrado & Vaudrevange [2013b]

- ☞ Many new non–Abelian heterotic toroidal orbifolds

  Konopka [2013], Fischer, Ramos-Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2013a]

Orbifold classification in the past and current status

- ☞ First attempts to classify symmetric heterotic toroidal orbifolds focused on Lie lattices

  Bailin & Love [1999]

- ☞ A more complete classification of the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold showed that there were many more possibilities than initially appreciated

  Förste, Kobayashi, Ohki & Takahashi [2006], Dillies [2007], Donagi & Wendland [2009]

- ☞ However, the $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ classification was not entirely complete, and there are many more examples in of $\mathbb{Z}_N \times \mathbb{Z}_M$ orbifolds yielding $\mathbb{Z}_N \times \mathbb{Z}_M$ orbifolds that have been missed previously

  Fischer, M.R., Torrado & Vaudrevange [2013b]

- ☞ Many new non–Abelian heterotic toroidal orbifolds

  Konopka [2013], Fischer, Ramos-Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2013a]

➥ The vast majority of heterotic orbifold geometries is known for less than 10 years

Non–local GUT breaking in heterotic orbifolds

- ☞ Non–local GUT breaking has been used in orbifold GUTs and in Calabi–Yau models

Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a], Hebecker & Trapletti [2005], Anandakrishnan & Raby [2013] ,. . .
Bouchard & Donagi [2006], Braun, Candelas, Davies & Donagi [2012], Anderson, Gray, Lukas & Palti [2012] ,. . .

Non–local GUT breaking in heterotic orbifolds

- ☞ Non–local GUT breaking has been used in orbifold GUTs and in Calabi–Yau models

  Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a], Hebecker & Trapletti [2005], Anandakrishnan & Raby [2013] ,. . .
  Bouchard & Donagi [2006], Braun, Candelas, Davies & Donagi [2012], Anderson, Gray, Lukas & Palti [2012] ,. . .

- ☞ More recently it also has been in heterotic orbifolds

  Donagi & Faraggi [2004], Blaszczyk, Nibbelink, M.R., Ruehle, Trapletti, et al. [2010]

Non–local GUT breaking in heterotic orbifolds

- ☞ Non–local GUT breaking has been used in orbifold GUTs and in Calabi–Yau models

  Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a], Hebecker & Trapletti [2005], Anandakrishnan & Raby [2013] ,. . .
  Bouchard & Donagi [2006], Braun, Candelas, Davies & Donagi [2012], Anderson, Gray, Lukas & Palti [2012] ,. . .

- ☞ More recently it also has been in heterotic orbifolds

  Donagi & Faraggi [2004], Blaszczyk, Nibbelink, M.R., Ruehle, Trapletti, et al. [2010]

- ☞ Complete classification of (symmetric toroidal) heterotic orbifolds allows us to understand more systematically how to construct models with a nontrivial fundamental group

  Donagi & Wendland [2009], Fischer, M.R., Torrado & Vaudrevange [2013b]
  Fischer, Ramos-Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2013a], Beye, Kobayashi & Kuwakino [2013]

Non–local GUT breaking in heterotic orbifolds

- ☞ Non–local GUT breaking has been used in orbifold GUTs and in Calabi–Yau models

  Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a], Hebecker & Trapletti [2005], Anandakrishnan & Raby [2013] ,...
  Bouchard & Donagi [2006], Braun, Candelas, Davies & Donagi [2012], Anderson, Gray, Lukas & Palti [2012] ,...

- ☞ More recently it also has been in heterotic orbifolds

  Donagi & Faraggi [2004], Blaszczyk, Nibbelink, M.R., Ruehle, Trapletti, et al. [2010]

- ☞ Complete classification of (symmetric toroidal) heterotic orbifolds allows us to understand more systematically how to construct models with a nontrivial fundamental group

  Donagi & Wendland [2009], Fischer, M.R., Torrado & Vaudrevange [2013b]
  Fischer, Ramos-Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2013a], Beye, Kobayashi & Kuwakino [2013]

- ☞ 31 geometries with non–trivial fundamental groups (after orbifolding!) with point groups $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$, $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_4$ and $\mathbb{Z}_3 \times \mathbb{Z}_3$

Non–local GUT breaking in heterotic orbifolds

- ☞ Non–local GUT breaking has been used in orbifold GUTs and in Calabi–Yau models

  Hall, Murayama & Nomura [2002a], Hebecker & Trapletti [2005], Anandakrishnan & Raby [2013] ,. . .
  Bouchard & Donagi [2006], Braun, Candelas, Davies & Donagi [2012], Anderson, Gray, Lukas & Palti [2012] ,. . .

- ☞ More recently it also has been in heterotic orbifolds

  Donagi & Faraggi [2004], Blaszczyk, Nibbelink, M.R., Ruehle, Trapletti, et al. [2010]

- ☞ Complete classification of (symmetric toroidal) heterotic orbifolds allows us to understand more systematically how to construct models with a nontrivial fundamental group

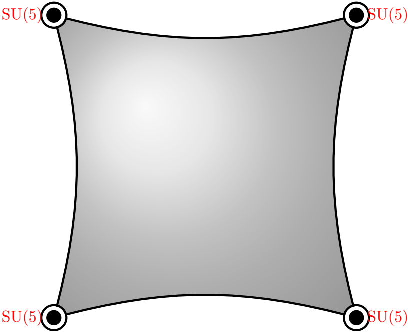
  Donagi & Wendland [2009], Fischer, M.R., Torrado & Vaudrevange [2013b]
  Fischer, Ramos-Sánchez & Vaudrevange [2013a], Beye, Kobayashi & Kuwakino [2013]

- ☞ 31 geometries with non–trivial fundamental groups (after orbifolding!) with point groups $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$, $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_4$ and $\mathbb{Z}_3 \times \mathbb{Z}_3$

An example

$\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold example

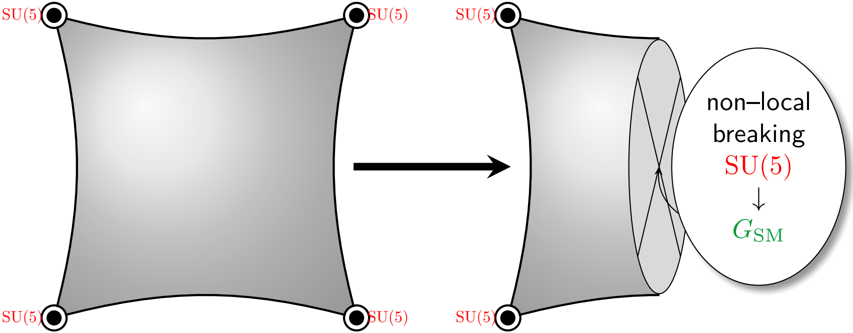
Blaszczyk, Nibbelink, M.R., Ruehle, Trapletti, et al. [2010] ; Kappl, Petersen, Raby, M.R., Schieren & Vaudrevange [2011]



❶ step: 6 generation $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ model with $\mathrm{SU}(5)$ symmetry

$\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold example

Blaszczyk, Nibbelink, M.R., Ruehle, Trapletti, et al. [2010] ; Kappl, Petersen, Raby, M.R., Schieren & Vaudrevange [2011]



❶ step: 6 generation $\mathbb{Z}_2 \times \mathbb{Z}_2$ model with $\mathrm{SU}(5)$ symmetry

❷ step: mod out a freely acting $\mathbb{Z}_2$ symmetry which:

- breaks $\mathrm{SU}(5) \to \mathrm{SU}(3)_C \times \mathrm{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathrm{U}(1)_Y$
- reduces the number of generations to 3

analogous mechanism in CY MSSMs Bouchard & Donagi [2006]
Braun, He, Ovrut & Pantev [2005]

Main features

① GUT symmetry breaking non–local
$\curvearrowright$ (almost) no ‘logarithmic running above the GUT scale’

Hebecker & Trapletti [2005] ; Anandakrishnan & Raby [2013]

Main features

❶ GUT symmetry breaking non–local

❷ No localized flux in hypercharge direction
$\curvearrowright$ complete blow–up without breaking SM gauge symmetry in principle possible

Main features

1. GUT symmetry breaking non–local
2. No localized flux in hypercharge direction
3. 4D gauge group:
   $\mathsf{SU}(3)_C \times \mathsf{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathsf{U}(1)_Y \times [\mathsf{SU}(3) \times \mathsf{SU}(2)^2 \times \mathsf{U}(1)^8]$

Main features

1. GUT symmetry breaking non–local
2. No localized flux in hypercharge direction
3. 4D gauge group:
   $\mathsf{SU}(3)_C \times \mathsf{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathsf{U}(1)_Y \times [\mathsf{SU}(3) \times \mathsf{SU}(2)^2 \times \mathsf{U}(1)^8]$
4. massless spectrum

#	representation	label
3	$(\mathbf{3},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/6}$	Q
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/3}$	$\overline{D}$
3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1}$	$\overline{E}$
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-1/2}$	h
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/3}$	$\overline{\delta}$
3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{3},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	x
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})_{0}$	y

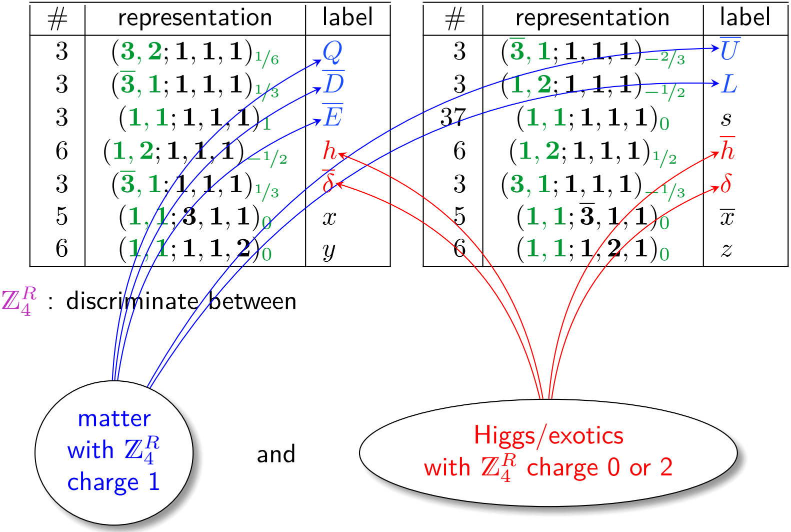
#	representation	label
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-\frac{2}{3}}$	$\overline{U}$
3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-\frac{1}{2}}$	L
37	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	s
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/2}$	$\overline{h}$
3	$(\mathbf{3},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-1/3}$	δ
5	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	$\overline{x}$
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	z

Main features

1. GUT symmetry breaking non–local
2. No localized flux in hypercharge direction
3. 4D gauge group:
   $\mathsf{SU}(3)_C \times \mathsf{SU}(2)_\mathrm{L} \times \mathsf{U}(1)_Y \times [\mathsf{SU}(3) \times \mathsf{SU}(2)^2 \times \mathsf{U}(1)^8]$
4. massless spectrum

   $\text{spectrum} = 3 \times \text{generation} + \text{vector–like}$

Spectrum and $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$



#	representation	label
3	$(\mathbf{3},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/6}$	Q
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/3}$	$\overline{D}$
3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1}$	$\overline{E}$
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-1/2}$	h
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/3}$	$\overline{\delta}$
5	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{3},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	x
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})_{0}$	y

#	representation	label
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-2/3}$	$\overline{U}$
3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-1/2}$	L
37	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	s
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/2}$	$\overline{h}$
3	$(\mathbf{3},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-1/3}$	δ
5	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	$\overline{x}$
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	z

$\mathbb{Z}_4^R$: discriminate between

matter with $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ charge 1

and

Higgs/exotics with $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ charge 0 or 2

Spectrum and $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$

#	representation	label
3	$(\mathbf{3},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/6}$	Q
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/3}$	$\overline{D}$
3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1}$	$\overline{E}$
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-1/2}$	h
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/3}$	$\overline{\delta}$
5	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{3},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	x
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2})_{0}$	y

#	representation	label
3	$(\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-2/3}$	$\overline{U}$
3	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-1/2}$	L
37	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	s
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{1/2}$	$\overline{h}$
3	$(\mathbf{3},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{-1/3}$	δ
5	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\overline{\mathbf{3}},\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	$\overline{x}$
6	$(\mathbf{1},\mathbf{1};\mathbf{1},\mathbf{2},\mathbf{1})_{0}$	z

☞ Many other good features:

- no fractionally charged exotics (i.e. all SM fields come from $\mathrm{SU}(5)$ representations)
- non–trivial full–rank Yukawa couplings
- gauge–top unification
- SU(5) relation $y_\tau \simeq y_b$ (but also for light generations)
- $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ symmetry

▸ back

The role of SM singlets

☞ Most orbifolds come with a so–called anomalous $\mathrm{U}(1)$ and a Fayet–Iliopoulos (FI) term

Atick, Dixon & Sen [1987] ;. . .

The role of SM singlets

- ☞ Most orbifolds come with a so–called anomalous $\mathrm{U}(1)$ and a Fayet–Iliopoulos (FI) term

Atick, Dixon & Sen [1987] ;. . .

- ☞ One can verify that the FI term can be cancelled while leaving supersymmetry and $G_{\mathrm{SM}} \times \mathbb{Z}_4^R$ unbroken by giving some SM singlets VEVs

The role of SM singlets

- ☞ Most orbifolds come with a so–called anomalous $\mathrm{U}(1)$ and a Fayet–Iliopoulos (FI) term

  Atick, Dixon & Sen [1987] ;. . .

- ☞ One can verify that the FI term can be cancelled while leaving supersymmetry and $G_{\mathrm{SM}} \times \mathbb{Z}_4^R$ unbroken by giving some SM singlets VEVs

- ☞ The singlet VEVs also induce mass terms and (Yukawa) couplings between the SM fields

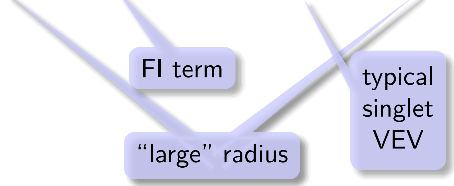
The role of SM singlets

- ☞ Most orbifolds come with a so–called anomalous $\mathrm{U}(1)$ and a Fayet–Iliopoulos (FI) term

Atick, Dixon & Sen [1987] ;. . .

- ☞ One can verify that the FI term can be cancelled while leaving supersymmetry and $G_{\mathrm{SM}} \times \mathbb{Z}_4^R$ unbroken by giving some SM singlets VEVs
- ☞ The singlet VEVs also induce mass terms and (Yukawa) couplings between the SM fields
- ☞ However, in anisotropic compactifications there is a problem of scales

$$R_{\mathrm{large}} > (\xi_{\mathrm{FI}})^{-1/2} \quad \curvearrowright \quad \langle s\rangle > 1/R_{\mathrm{large}}$$



FI term

“large” radius

typical singlet VEV

The role of SM singlets

- ☞ Most orbifolds come with a so–called anomalous $\mathrm{U}(1)$ and a Fayet–Iliopoulos (FI) term

Atick, Dixon & Sen [1987] ;. . .

- ☞ One can verify that the FI term can be cancelled while leaving supersymmetry and $G_{\mathrm{SM}} \times \mathbb{Z}_4^R$ unbroken by giving some SM singlets VEVs
- ☞ The singlet VEVs also induce mass terms and (Yukawa) couplings between the SM fields
- ☞ However, in anisotropic compactifications there is a problem of scales

$$R_{\mathrm{large}} > (\xi_{\mathrm{FI}})^{-1/2} \quad \curvearrowright \quad \langle s \rangle > 1/R_{\mathrm{large}}$$

Open (?) question:

How can one explain R_{large} and obtain a reliable effective 4D description?

Anisotropic compactifications

☞ There are some ideas to explain R_{large}

Buchmüller, Catena & Schmidt-Hoberg [2008]

Anisotropic compactifications

- ☞ There are some ideas to explain R_{large} …but it is probably fair to say that more research is needed to obtain a complete picture

  Buchmüller, Catena & Schmidt-Hoberg [2008]

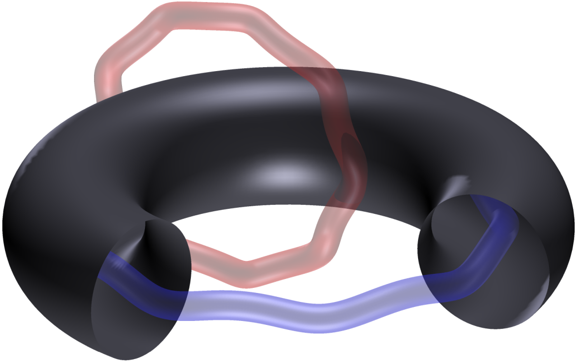
- ☞ It appears much more straightforward to explain the small radii

  Font, Ibáñez, Lüst & Quevedo [1990], Nilles & Olechowski [1990] ,…

Phsysic of the winding modes

- ☞ Winding modes have also been used to stabilize compact directions

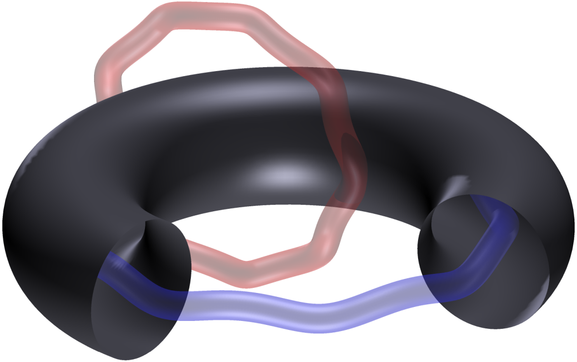
e.g. Danos, Frey & Brandenberger [2008], Easther, Greene & Jackson [2002]



Phsysic of the winding modes

- ☞ Winding modes have also been used to stabilize compact directions

e.g. Danos, Frey & Brandenberger [2008], Easther, Greene & Jackson [2002]



- ☞ Winding modes may even be dark matter

Mütter & Vaudrevange [2020]

Brief recap

- ☞ New orbifold geometries allow us to construct explicit string models with MSSM spectrum and non–local GUT breaking

Brief recap

- ☞ New orbifold geometries allow us to construct explicit string models with MSSM spectrum and non–local GUT breaking
- ☞ R symmetries provide us with a solution to the μ problem and avoid unrealistic proton decay

Brief recap

- ☞ New orbifold geometries allow us to construct explicit string models with MSSM spectrum and non–local GUT breaking
- ☞ R symmetries provide us with a solution to the μ problem and avoid unrealistic proton decay
- ☞ Models come also with see–saw suppressed neutrino masses

Buchmüller, Hamaguchi, Lebedev, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2007]
Lebedev, Nilles, Raby, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2007b]

Brief recap

☞ New orbifold geometries allow us to construct explicit string models with MSSM spectrum and non–local GUT breaking

☞ R symmetries provide us with a solution to the μ problem and avoid unrealistic proton decay

☞ Models come also with see–saw suppressed neutrino masses

Buchmüller, Hamaguchi, Lebedev, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2007]
Lebedev, Nilles, Raby, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2007b]

☞ However, in the absence of an experimental confirmation of supersymmetry one may want to look more into models without low–energy supersymmetry

Dienes [1994], Dienes, Moshe & Myers [1995], Dienes [2001]
⋮
Cribiori, Parameswaran, Tonioni & Wrase [2021]

Brief recap

☞ New orbifold geometries allow us to construct explicit string models with MSSM spectrum and non–local GUT breaking

☞ R symmetries provide us with a solution to the μ problem and avoid unrealistic proton decay

☞ Models come also with see–saw suppressed neutrino masses

Buchmüller, Hamaguchi, Lebedev, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2007]
Lebedev, Nilles, Raby, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2007b]

☞ However, in the absence of an experimental confirmation of supersymmetry one may want to look more into models without low–energy supersymmetry

Dienes [1994], Dienes, Moshe & Myers [1995], Dienes [2001]
⋮
Cribiori, Parameswaran, Tonioni & Wrase [2021]

☞ Modular invariance seems to play a crucial role

Brief recap

- ☞ New orbifold geometries allow us to construct explicit string models with MSSM spectrum and non–local GUT breaking
- ☞ R symmetries provide us with a solution to the μ problem and avoid unrealistic proton decay
- ☞ Models come also with see–saw suppressed neutrino masses

Buchmüller, Hamaguchi, Lebedev, Ramos-Sánchez & M.R. [2007]
Lebedev, Nilles, Raby, Ramos-Sánchez, M.R., Vaudrevange & Wingerter [2007b]

- ☞ However, in the absence of an experimental confirmation of supersymmetry one may want to look more into models without low–energy supersymmetry

Dienes [1994], Dienes, Moshe & Myers [1995], Dienes [2001]

⋮

Cribiori, Parameswaran, Tonioni & Wrase [2021]

- ☞ Modular invariance seems to play a crucial role. . . also for the following

R Symmetries

for the

MSSM

Claim 1: Non–R symmetries cannot forbid μ

Hall, Nomura & Pierce [2002b], Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

☞ Anomaly coefficients for non–R symmetry with SU(5) relations for matter charges

Ibáñez & Ross [1991] ,Banks & Dine [1992] ,. . .
Araki et al. [2008] ,. . .

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} = \sum_{g=1}^{3}\left[\frac{3}{2}q_{\mathbf{10}}^{g} + \frac{1}{2}q_{\overline{\mathbf{5}}}^{g}\right]$$

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} = \sum_{g=1}^{3}\left[\frac{3}{2}q_{\mathbf{10}}^{g} + \frac{1}{2}q_{\overline{\mathbf{5}}}^{g}\right] + \frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u} + q_{H_d}\right)$$

sum over matter charges

Claim 1: Non–R symmetries cannot forbid μ

Hall, Nomura & Pierce [2002b], Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

☞ Anomaly coefficients for non–R symmetry with SU(5) relations for matter charges

Ibáñez & Ross [1991] ,Banks & Dine [1992] ,. . .
Araki et al. [2008] ,. . .

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} = \sum_{g=1}^{3}\left[\frac{3}{2}q^g_{\mathbf{10}} + \frac{1}{2}q^g_{\overline{\mathbf{5}}}\right]$$

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} = \sum_{g=1}^{3}\left[\frac{3}{2}q^g_{\mathbf{10}} + \frac{1}{2}q^g_{\overline{\mathbf{5}}}\right] + \frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u} + q_{H_d}\right)$$

☞ Anomaly universality: $A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} - A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} \;=\; 0$

$$\curvearrowright \quad \frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u} + q_{H_d}\right) \;=\; 0 \mod \begin{cases} N & \text{for } N \text{ odd} \\ N/2 & \text{for } N \text{ even}\end{cases}$$

Claim 1: Non–R symmetries cannot forbid μ

Hall, Nomura & Pierce [2002b], Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

☞ Anomaly coefficients for non–R symmetry with SU(5) relations for matter charges

Ibáñez & Ross [1991] ,Banks & Dine [1992] ,. . .
Araki et al. [2008] ,. . .

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} = \sum_{g=1}^{3}\left[\frac{3}{2}q_{\mathbf{10}}^{g} + \frac{1}{2}q_{\overline{\mathbf{5}}}^{g}\right]$$

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} = \sum_{g=1}^{3}\left[\frac{3}{2}q_{\mathbf{10}}^{g} + \frac{1}{2}q_{\overline{\mathbf{5}}}^{g}\right] + \frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u} + q_{H_d}\right)$$

☞ Anomaly universality: $A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} - A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} \;=\; 0$

$$\curvearrowright \quad \frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u} + q_{H_d}\right) \;=\; 0 \mod \begin{cases} N & \text{for } N \text{ odd} \\ N/2 & \text{for } N \text{ even} \end{cases}$$

bottom-line:

non–R $\mathbb{Z}_N$ symmetry cannot forbid μ term

R symmetries and conventions

☞ Under an R symmetry the superspace coordinate θ has charge $q_\theta \neq 0$.

R symmetries and conventions

- ☞ Under an R symmetry the superspace coordinate θ has charge $q_\theta \neq 0$.
- ☞ Anomaly–free continuous R symmetries are not available in the MSSM

  Chamseddine & Dreiner [1996]

R symmetries and conventions

- ☞ Under an R symmetry the superspace coordinate θ has charge $q_\theta \neq 0$.
- ☞ Anomaly–free continuous R symmetries are not available in the MSSM

  Chamseddine & Dreiner [1996]
- ☞ For discrete R symmetries we can choose w.l.o.g. q_θ to be a positive integer

R symmetries and conventions

- ☞ Under an R symmetry the superspace coordinate θ has charge $q_\theta \neq 0$.
- ☞ Anomaly–free continuous R symmetries are not available in the MSSM

  Chamseddine & Dreiner [1996]
- ☞ For discrete R symmetries we can choose w.l.o.g. q_θ to be a positive integer
- ☞ However, $q_\theta > 1$ means that only a subsymmetry is really an R symmetry

R symmetries and conventions

- ☞ Under an R symmetry the superspace coordinate θ has charge $q_\theta \neq 0$.
- ☞ Anomaly–free continuous R symmetries are not available in the MSSM

  Chamseddine & Dreiner [1996]
- ☞ For discrete R symmetries we can choose w.l.o.g. q_θ to be a positive integer
- ☞ However, $q_\theta > 1$ means that only a subsymmetry is really an R symmetry
- ➥ We will take mainly $q_\theta = 1$ and thus $q_{\mathscr{W}} = 2$ such that

$$\int \mathrm{d}^2\theta\, \mathscr{W} \quad \text{is invariant}$$

R symmetries and conventions

- ☞ Under an R symmetry the superspace coordinate θ has charge $q_\theta \neq 0$.
- ☞ Anomaly–free continuous R symmetries are not available in the MSSM

  Chamseddine & Dreiner [1996]
- ☞ For discrete R symmetries we can choose w.l.o.g. q_θ to be a positive integer
- ☞ However, $q_\theta > 1$ means that only a subsymmetry is really an R symmetry
- ➥ We will take mainly $q_\theta = 1$ and thus $q_{\mathscr{W}} = 2$ such that

$$\int \mathrm{d}^2\theta\, \mathscr{W} \quad \text{is invariant}$$

- ☞ Notice that there are also non–Abelian discrete R symmetries in $\mathcal{N} = 1$ SUSY

  Chen, M.R. & Trautner [2013b]

Claim 2: $\mathrm{SO}(10)$ implies unique symmetry

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

☞ Assumption: quarks and leptons have universal R charge q

Claim 2: $\mathrm{SO}(10)$ implies unique symmetry

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

- ☞ Assumption: quarks and leptons have universal R charge q
- ☞ u- and d-type Yukawas allowed requires that

$$2q + q_{H_u} = 2 \mod N \quad \text{and} \quad 2q + q_{H_d} = 2 \mod N$$

by convention $\mathscr{W}$ has R charge 2

Claim 2: SO(10) implies unique symmetry

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

☞ Assumption: quarks and leptons have universal R charge q

☞ u- and d-type Yukawas allowed requires that

$$2q + q_{H_u} = 2 \mod N \quad \text{and} \quad 2q + q_{H_d} = 2 \mod N$$

$$\curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u} - q_{H_d} = 0 \mod N$$

Claim 2: SO(10) implies unique symmetry

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

☞ Assumption: quarks and leptons have universal R charge q

☞ u- and d-type Yukawas allowed requires that

$$2q + q_{H_u} = 2 \mod N \quad \text{and} \quad 2q + q_{H_d} = 2 \mod N$$

$$\curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u} - q_{H_d} = 0 \mod N$$

☞ u-type Yukawa and Weinberg operator allowed requires that

$$2q + q_{H_u} = 2 \mod N \quad \text{and} \quad 2q + 2q_{H_u} = 2 \mod N$$

Claim 2: SO(10) implies unique symmetry

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

- ☞ Assumption: quarks and leptons have universal R charge q
- ☞ u- and d-type Yukawas allowed requires that

$$2q + q_{H_u} = 2 \mod N \quad \text{and} \quad 2q + q_{H_d} = 2 \mod N$$

$$\curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u} - q_{H_d} = 0 \mod N$$

- ☞ u-type Yukawa and Weinberg operator allowed requires that

$$2q + q_{H_u} = 2 \mod N \quad \text{and} \quad 2q + 2q_{H_u} = 2 \mod N$$

$$\curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u} = 0 \mod N$$

Claim 2: SO(10) implies unique symmetry

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011a]

- ☞ Assumption: quarks and leptons have universal R charge q
- ☞ u- and d-type Yukawas allowed requires that

$$2q+q_{H_u}=2 \mod N \quad \text{and} \quad 2q+q_{H_d}=2 \mod N$$

$$\curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u}-q_{H_d} = 0 \mod N$$

- ☞ u-type Yukawa and Weinberg operator allowed requires that

$$2q+q_{H_u} = 2 \mod N \quad \text{and} \quad 2q+2q_{H_u} = 2 \mod N$$

$$\curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u} = 0 \mod N$$

- ➥ first conclusion:

$$q_{H_u} = q_{H_d} = 0 \mod N$$

Claim 2: SO(10) implies unique symmetry (cont'd)

☞ Anomaly coefficients for Abelian discrete R symmetry

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6(q-1)+3 \;=\; 6q-3$$

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6q + \frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u}+q_{H_d}\right) - 5$$

Claim 2: SO(10) implies unique symmetry (cont'd)

- ☞ Anomaly coefficients for Abelian discrete R symmetry

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6(q-1)+3 \;=\; 6q-3$$
$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6q+\frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u}+q_{H_d}\right)-5$$

- ☞ Anomaly universality

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} - A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} \;=\; 0$$
$$\curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u}+q_{H_d} \;=\; 4 \quad \mathrm{mod} \begin{cases} 2N & \text{for } N \text{ odd} \\ N & \text{for } N \text{ even} \end{cases}$$

Claim 2: SO(10) implies unique symmetry (cont'd)

- ☞ Anomaly coefficients for Abelian discrete R symmetry

$$\begin{aligned} A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} &= 6(q-1)+3 \;=\; 6q-3 \\ A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} &= 6q+\frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u}+q_{H_d}\right)-5 \end{aligned}$$

- ☞ Anomaly universality

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} - A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} \;=\; 0$$

$$\curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u}+q_{H_d} \;=\; 4 \mod \begin{cases} 2N & \text{for } N \text{ odd} \\ N & \text{for } N \text{ even} \end{cases}$$

- ☞ but we know already that $q_{H_u} = q_{H_d} = 0 \mod N$

Claim 2: SO(10) implies unique symmetry (cont'd)

☞ Anomaly coefficients for Abelian discrete R symmetry

$$\begin{aligned} A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} &= 6(q-1)+3 \;=\; 6q-3 \\ A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} &= 6q+\frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u}+q_{H_d}\right)-5 \end{aligned}$$

☞ Anomaly universality

$$\begin{aligned} A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} - A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} &= 0 \\ \curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u}+q_{H_d} &= 4 \mod \begin{cases} 2N & \text{for } N \text{ odd} \\ N & \text{for } N \text{ even} \end{cases} \end{aligned}$$

☞ but we know already that $q_{H_u}=q_{H_d}=0 \mod N$

bottom-line:

$N=2$ or $N=4$

Claim 2: SO(10) implies unique symmetry (cont'd)

- Anomaly coefficients for Abelian discrete R symmetry

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6(q-1)+3 \;=\; 6q-3$$

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6q + \frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u}+q_{H_d}\right) - 5$$

- Anomaly universality

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R}$$

however: there is no meaningful $\mathbb{Z}_2^R$ symmetry

cf. e.g. Dine & Kehayias [2010]

$$\curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u} + q_{H_d} = 4 \mod \left\{ \begin{array}{ll} & \\ N & \text{for } N \text{ even} \end{array} \right.$$

- but we know already that $q_{H_u} = q_{H_d} = 0 \mod N$

bottom-line:

~~$N=2$ or~~ $N=4$

Claim 2: SO(10) implies unique symmetry (cont'd)

- ☞ Anomaly coefficients for Abelian discrete R symmetry

$$\begin{aligned} A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} &= 6(q-1)+3 \;=\; 6q-3 \\ A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} &= 6q+\frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u}+q_{H_d}\right)-5 \end{aligned}$$

- ☞ Anomaly universality

$$\begin{aligned} A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} - A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} \;&=\; 0 \\ \curvearrowright \quad q_{H_u}+q_{H_d} \;&=\; 4 \quad \mathrm{mod} \begin{cases} 2N & \text{for } N \text{ odd} \\ N & \text{for } N \text{ even} \end{cases} \end{aligned}$$

- ☞ but we know already that $q_{H_u}=q_{H_d}=0 \mod N$

bottom-line:

$N=4$ unique

Unique $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ symmetry

☞ We know:

- it is a $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ symmetry
- Higgs fields have charge $q_{H_u} = q_{H_d} = 0 \mod 4$

Unique $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ symmetry

☞ We know:

- it is a $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ symmetry
- Higgs fields have charge $q_{H_u} = q_{H_d} = 0 \mod 4$

➥ Yukawa couplings and Weinberg operator allowed $\curvearrowright$ matter has charge $q = 1$

Unique $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ symmetry

- ☞ We know:
  - it is a $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ symmetry
  - Higgs fields have charge $q_{H_u} = q_{H_d} = 0 \mod 4$
- ➥ Yukawa couplings and Weinberg operator allowed $\curvearrowright$ matter has charge $q = 1$
- ☞ Consistent with anomaly universality

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6(q-1)+3 = 6q-3 = 1 \mod 4/2$$

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6q + \frac{1}{2}\,(q_{H_u}+q_{H_d}) - 5 = 1 \mod 4/2$$

$$A_{\mathrm{U}(1)_Y^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6q + \frac{3}{5}\cdot\frac{1}{2}\cdot(q_{H_u}+q_{H_d}-2)$$

e.g. $q_{H_u} = q_{H_d} = 16$

Unique $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ symmetry

☞ We know:

- it is a $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ symmetry
- Higgs fields have charge $q_{H_u} = q_{H_d} = 0 \mod 4$

➥ Yukawa couplings and Weinberg operator allowed $\curvearrowright$ matter has charge $q = 1$

☞ Consistent with anomaly universality

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6(q-1)+3 = 6q-3 = 1 \mod 4/2$$

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6q + \frac{1}{2}\left(q_{H_u}+q_{H_d}\right) - 5 = 1 \mod 4/2$$

$$A_{\mathrm{U}(1)_Y^2-\mathbb{Z}_N^R} = 6q + \frac{3}{5}\cdot\frac{1}{2}\cdot\left(q_{H_u}+q_{H_d}-2\right)$$

bottom-line:

- $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ is anomaly free via GS mechanism
- GS axion contributes to gravitational anomaly

't Hooft anomaly matching for R symmetries

- ☞ Powerful tool: anomaly matching

't Hooft [1980], Csáki & Murayama [1998]

't Hooft anomaly matching for R symmetries

- Powerful tool: anomaly matching

't Hooft [1980], Csáki & Murayama [1998]

- At the SU(5) level: one anomaly coefficient

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} = A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 5q_\theta$$

extra

matter

gauginos

't Hooft anomaly matching for R symmetries

- Powerful tool: anomaly matching

't Hooft [1980], Csáki & Murayama [1998]

- At the $\mathrm{SU}(5)$ level: one anomaly coefficient

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} = A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 5q_\theta$$

- Consider the $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ and $\mathrm{SU}(2)$ subgroups

$$\begin{aligned} A^{\mathrm{SU}(5)}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} &= A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 3q_\theta + \frac{1}{2}\cdot 2\cdot 2\cdot q_\theta \\ A^{\mathrm{SU}(5)}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} &= A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 2q_\theta + \frac{1}{2}\cdot 2\cdot 3\cdot q_\theta \end{aligned}$$

SM gauginos

universal

extra gauginos from X, Y bosons

't Hooft anomaly matching for R symmetries

- Powerful tool: anomaly matching

't Hooft [1980], Csáki & Murayama [1998]

- At the $\mathrm{SU}(5)$ level: one anomaly coefficient

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} \;=\; A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 5q_\theta$$

- Consider the $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ and $\mathrm{SU}(2)$ subgroups

$$\begin{aligned} A^{\mathrm{SU}(5)}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} &= A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 3q_\theta + \xcancel{\frac{1}{2}\cdot 2\cdot 2\cdot q_\theta} \\ A^{\mathrm{SU}(5)}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} &= A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 2q_\theta + \xcancel{\frac{1}{2}\cdot 2\cdot 3\cdot q_\theta} \end{aligned}$$

- Assume now that some mechanism eliminates the extra gauginos

't Hooft anomaly matching for R symmetries

- Powerful tool: anomaly matching 't Hooft [1980], Csáki & Murayama [1998]
- At the $\mathrm{SU}(5)$ level: one anomaly coefficient

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} = A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 5q_\theta$$

- Consider the $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ and $\mathrm{SU}(2)$ subgroups

$$\begin{aligned} A^{\mathrm{SU}(5)}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} &= A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 3q_\theta + \cancel{\frac{1}{2}\cdot 2\cdot 2\cdot q_\theta} \\ A^{\mathrm{SU}(5)}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} &= A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 2q_\theta + \cancel{\frac{1}{2}\cdot 2\cdot 3\cdot q_\theta} \end{aligned}$$

- Assume now that some mechanism eliminates the extra gauginos

➥ Extra stuff must be non–universal (split multiplets) with the simplest option being the pair of Higgs doublets!

't Hooft anomaly matching for R symmetries

- Powerful tool: anomaly matching 't Hooft [1980], Csáki & Murayama [1998]
- At the $\mathrm{SU}(5)$ level: one anomaly coefficient

$$A_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} \;=\; A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(5)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 5q_\theta$$

- Consider the $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ and $\mathrm{SU}(2)$ subgroups

$$\begin{aligned} A^{\mathrm{SU}(5)}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} &= A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(3)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 3q_\theta + \cancel{\frac{1}{2}\cdot 2\cdot 2\cdot q_\theta} \\ A^{\mathrm{SU}(5)}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} &= A^{\text{matter}}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + A^{\text{extra}}_{\mathrm{SU}(2)^2-\mathbb{Z}_M^R} + 2q_\theta + \cancel{\frac{1}{2}\cdot 2\cdot 3\cdot q_\theta} \end{aligned}$$

- Assume now that some mechanism eliminates the extra gauginos

➥ Extra stuff must be non–universal (split multiplets)

bottom–line:

't Hooft anomaly matching for (discrete) R symmetries implies the presence of split multiplets below the GUT scale!

Claim 3: only 5 symmetries obey SU(5) relations

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011b]

☞ Demanding SU(5) rather than SO(10) relations we find that the order N of possible $\mathbb{Z}_N^R$ symmetries has to divide 24

Claim 3: only 5 symmetries obey SU(5) relations

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011b]

- ☞ Demanding SU(5) rather than SO(10) relations we find that the order N of possible $\mathbb{Z}_N^R$ symmetries has to divide 24
- ☞ There are only five viable charge assignments

N	$q_{\mathbf{10}}$	$q_{\overline{\mathbf{5}}}$	q_{H_u}	q_{H_d}	ρ	$A_0^R(\mathrm{MSSM})$
4	1	1	0	0	1	1
6	5	3	4	0	0	1
8	1	5	0	4	1	3
12	5	9	4	0	3	1
24	5	9	16	12	9	7

Recall

$$A_{G^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} = \sum_f \ell^{(f)} q^{(f)} \stackrel{!}{=} \rho \mod \eta$$

$$A_{\mathsf{grav}^2-\mathbb{Z}_N} = \sum_m q^{(m)} \stackrel{!}{=} \rho \mod \eta$$

Claim 3: only 5 symmetries obey SU(5) relations

Lee, Raby, M.R., Ross, Schieren, Schmidt-Hoberg & Vaudrevange [2011b]

- Demanding SU(5) rather than SO(10) relations we find that the order N of possible $\mathbb{Z}_N^R$ symmetries has to divide 24
- There are only five viable charge assignments

N	$q_{\mathbf{10}}$	$q_{\overline{\mathbf{5}}}$	q_{H_u}	q_{H_d}	ρ	$A_0^R(\mathrm{MSSM})$
4	1	1	0	0	1	1
6	5	3	4	0	0	1
8	1	5	0	4	1	3
12	5	9	4	0	3	1
24	5	9	16	12	9	7

- $\mathbb{Z}_6^R$ is anomaly–free without Green–Schwarz axion and requires 3 generations

Evans, Ibe, Kehayias & Yanagida [2012]

back

Large Hierarchies in Nature

Large hierarchies in Nature

☞ Observed hierarchy: $M_{\mathrm{P}}/m_W \sim 10^{17}$

Large hierarchies in Nature

- ☞ Observed hierarchy: $M_{\mathrm{P}}/m_W \sim 10^{17}$

Why?

Large hierarchies in Nature

☞ Observed hierarchy: $M_{\mathrm{P}}/m_W \sim 10^{17}$

Why?

☞ Compelling answer: scale of supersymmetry breakdown set by dimensional transmutation Witten [1981]

$$\Lambda \sim M_{\mathrm{P}}\,\exp\left(-b/g^2\right)$$

Large hierarchies in Nature

☞ Observed hierarchy: $M_\mathrm{P}/m_W \sim 10^{17}$

Why?

☞ Compelling answer: scale of supersymmetry breakdown set by dimensional transmutation

Witten [1981]

$$\Lambda \sim M_\mathrm{P} \, \exp\left(-b/g^2\right)$$

$\mathcal{O}(10)$

RG invariant scale

$\mathcal{O}(1)$ coupling

Large hierarchies in Nature

☞ Observed hierarchy: $M_{\mathrm{P}}/m_W \sim 10^{17}$

Why?

☞ Compelling answer: scale of supersymmetry breakdown set by dimensional transmutation

Witten [1981]

$$\Lambda \sim M_{\mathrm{P}} \exp\left(-b/g^2\right)$$

➥ hierarchically small gravitino mass (‘gaugino condensation’)

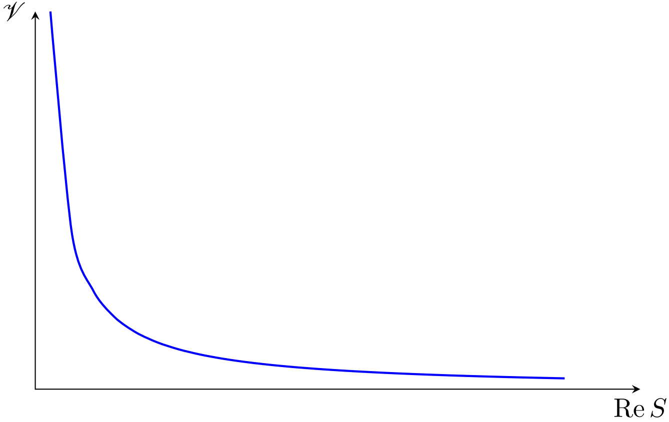
Nilles [1982]

$$m_W \sim m_{3/2} \sim \frac{\Lambda^3}{{M_{\mathrm{P}}}^2}$$

Problem with string theory realization

☞ **However**: embedding into string theory $\curvearrowright$ run–away problem

Dine & Seiberg [1985]



Moduli fixing and non–perturbative terms

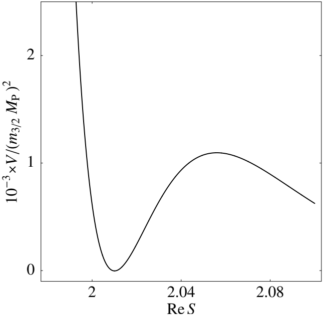
There exist various possibilities to fix the gauge coupling/stabilize the dilaton:

Moduli fixing and non–perturbative terms

There exist various possibilities to fix the gauge coupling/stabilize the dilaton:

- Race–track
  Krasnikov [1987] ; . . .

use several gaugino condensates



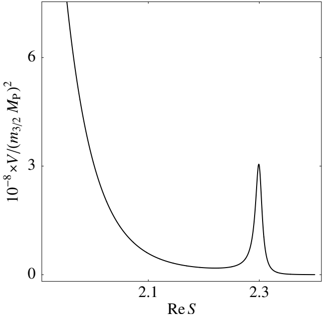
Moduli fixing and non–perturbative terms

There exist various possibilities to fix the gauge coupling/stabilize the dilaton:

- Race–track
- Kähler stabilization

Casas [1996] ; Binétruy, Gaillard & Wu [1997] ; . . .

non–perturbative corrections to the Kähler potential



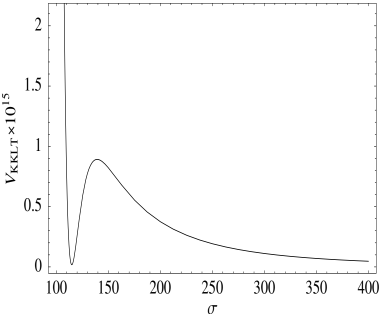
Moduli fixing and non–perturbative terms

There exist various possibilities to fix the gauge coupling/stabilize the dilaton:

- Race–track
- Kähler stabilization
- Flux compactification

e.g. Kachru, Kallosh, Linde & Trivedi [2003]

e.g. KKLT proposal



Moduli fixing and non–perturbative terms

There exist various possibilities to fix the gauge coupling/stabilize the dilaton:

- Race–track
- Kähler stabilization
- Flux compactification
- etc. . . .

?

Constant + exponential scheme

☞ KKLT type proposal: $\mathscr{W}_{\mathrm{eff}} = c + A\,\mathrm{e}^{-a\,S}$

constant

non–perturbative

Constant + exponential scheme

- ☞ KKLT type proposal: $\mathscr{W}_{\text{eff}} = c + A\,\mathrm{e}^{-a\,S}$
- ☞ Gravitino mass

$$m_{3/2} \sim |c|$$

Constant + exponential scheme

- ☞ KKLT type proposal: $\mathscr{W}_{\mathrm{eff}} = c + A\,\mathrm{e}^{-a\,S}$
- ☞ Gravitino mass

$$m_{3/2} \sim |c| \quad \xrightarrow{m_{3/2} \overset{!}{\simeq} \mathrm{TeV}} \quad |c| \sim 10^{-15}$$

Constant + exponential scheme

- KKLT type proposal: $\mathscr{W}_{\mathrm{eff}} = c + A\,\mathrm{e}^{-a\,S}$
- Gravitino mass

$$m_{3/2} \sim |c| \quad \xrightarrow{m_{3/2} \overset{!}{\simeq} \mathrm{TeV}} \quad |c| \sim 10^{-15}$$

- Philosophy of flux compactifications: many vacua, in some of them c might be small by accident

www.nature.com

Constant + exponential scheme

- KKLT type proposal: $\mathscr{W}_{\mathrm{eff}} = c + A\,\mathrm{e}^{-a\,S}$
- Gravitino mass

$$m_{3/2} \sim |c| \qquad \xrightarrow{m_{3/2} \overset{!}{\simeq} \mathrm{TeV}} \qquad |c| \sim 10^{-15}$$

- Philosophy of flux compactifications: many vacua, in some of them c might be small by accident
- Alternative proposal: hierarchically small expectation of the perturbative superpotential due to approximate $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry

$$c \to \langle \mathscr{W}_{\mathrm{pert}} \rangle \sim \langle \phi \rangle^N \quad \text{with} \quad N = \mathcal{O}(10)$$

typical VEV < 1

order of $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ breaking

Hierarchically small $\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle$

Two observations:

1. in the presence of an exact $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry

$$\frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i} = 0 \quad \curvearrowright \quad \langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$$

Hierarchically small $\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle$

Two observations:

1. in the presence of an exact $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry

$$\frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i} = 0 \quad \curvearrowright \quad \langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$$

fields

superpotential

Hierarchically small $\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle$

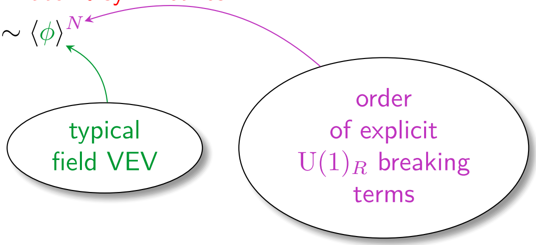
Two observations:

1. in the presence of an exact $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry

$$\frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i} = 0 \quad \curvearrowright \quad \langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$$

2. for approximate R symmetries

$$\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle \sim \langle \phi \rangle^N$$



typical field VEV

order of explicit $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ breaking terms

$\langle\mathscr{W}\rangle = 0$ because of $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ (I)

aim: show that

$$\frac{\partial\mathscr{W}}{\partial\phi_i} = 0 \qquad \curvearrowright \qquad \langle\mathscr{W}\rangle = 0$$

$\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$ because of $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ (I)

aim: show that

$$\frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i} = 0 \qquad \curvearrowright \qquad \langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$$

Consider a superpotential

$$\mathscr{W} = \sum c_{n_1 \cdots n_M} \phi_1^{n_1} \cdots \phi_M^{n_M}$$

with an exact R symmetry

$$\mathscr{W} \to \mathrm{e}^{2\mathrm{i}\,\alpha}\,\mathscr{W} \;, \quad \phi_j \to \phi_j' = \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\,r_j\,\alpha}\,\phi_j$$

where each monomial in $\mathscr{W}$ has total R charge 2

$\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$ because of $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ (II)

Consider a field configuration $\langle \phi_i \rangle$ with

$$F_i = \frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i} = 0 \quad \text{at } \phi_j = \langle \phi_j \rangle$$

Under an infinitesimal $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ transformation, the superpotential transforms nontrivially

$$\mathscr{W}(\phi_j) \to \mathscr{W}(\phi_j') = \mathscr{W}(\phi_j) + \sum_i \frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i} \Delta\phi_i$$

$\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$ because of $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ (II)

Consider a field configuration $\langle \phi_i \rangle$ with

$$F_i = \frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i} = 0 \quad \text{at } \phi_j = \langle \phi_j \rangle$$

Under an infinitesimal $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ transformation, the superpotential transforms nontrivially

$$\mathscr{W}(\phi_j) \to \mathscr{W}(\phi_j') = \mathscr{W}(\phi_j) + \sum_i \cancel{\frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i}} \Delta\phi_i$$

$\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$ because of $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ (II)

Consider a field configuration $\langle \phi_i \rangle$ with

$$F_i = \frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i} = 0 \quad \text{at } \phi_j = \langle \phi_j \rangle$$

Under an infinitesimal $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ transformation, the superpotential transforms nontrivially

$$\mathscr{W}(\phi_j) \to \mathscr{W}(\phi_j') = \mathscr{W}(\phi_j) + \sum_i \cancel{\frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i}} \Delta\phi_i \overset{!}{=} \mathrm{e}^{2\mathrm{i}\,\alpha}\,\mathscr{W}$$

This is only possible if $\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$!

bottom–line:

$$\frac{\partial \mathscr{W}}{\partial \phi_i} = 0 \qquad \curvearrowright \qquad \langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$$

Comments

1. Statement $\langle\mathscr{W}\rangle = 0$ holds regardless of whether $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ is unbroken (where it is trivial) or broken

Comments

❶ Statement $\langle\mathscr{W}\rangle = 0$ holds regardless of whether $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ is unbroken $\bigl($where it is trivial$\bigr)$ or broken

❷ Relation to Nelson–Seiberg theorem

Nelson & Seiberg [1994]

$$\left\{\begin{array}{c}\text{setting without}\\ \text{supersymmetric}\\ \text{ground state}\end{array}\right\} \xrightarrow{\text{requires}} \mathrm{U}(1)_R\ \text{symmetry}$$

Comments

❶ Statement $\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$ holds regardless of whether $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ is unbroken (where it is trivial) or broken

❷ Relation to Nelson–Seiberg theorem

Nelson & Seiberg [1994]

$$\left\{\begin{array}{c}\text{setting without}\\ \text{supersymmetric}\\ \text{ground state}\end{array}\right\} \begin{array}{c}\xrightarrow{\text{requires}}\\[1em] \xleftarrow{\text{does not imply}}\!/\!/\!/\!/\!/\!/\!/\!/\!/\end{array} \mathrm{U}(1)_R\ \text{symmetry}$$

Comments

1. Statement $\langle\mathscr{W}\rangle = 0$ holds regardless of whether $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ is unbroken (where it is trivial) or broken

2. Relation to Nelson–Seiberg theorem

   Nelson & Seiberg [1994]

$$\left\{\begin{array}{c}\text{setting without}\\ \text{supersymmetric}\\ \text{ground state}\end{array}\right\} \begin{array}{c}\xrightarrow{\text{requires}}\\[1em] \overset{\text{does not imply}}{\not\longleftarrow}\end{array} \mathrm{U}(1)_R\ \text{symmetry}$$

3. in local SUSY : $\dfrac{\partial\mathscr{W}}{\partial\phi_i} = 0$ and $\langle\mathscr{W}\rangle = 0$ imply $D_i\mathscr{W} = 0$

   (That is, a $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry implies Minkowski solutions.)

Comments

❶ Statement $\langle\mathscr{W}\rangle = 0$ holds regardless of whether $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ is unbroken (where it is trivial) or broken

❷ Relation to Nelson–Seiberg theorem

Nelson & Seiberg [1994]

$$\left\{\begin{array}{c}\text{setting without}\\ \text{supersymmetric}\\ \text{ground state}\end{array}\right\} \begin{array}{c}\xrightarrow{\text{requires}}\\ \cancel{\xleftarrow{\text{does not imply}}}\end{array} \mathrm{U}(1)_R\ \text{symmetry}$$

❸ in local SUSY : $\dfrac{\partial\mathscr{W}}{\partial\phi_i} = 0$ and $\langle\mathscr{W}\rangle = 0$ imply $D_i\mathscr{W} = 0$

(That is, a $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry implies Minkowski solutions.)

❹ in 'no-scale' type settings

Weinberg [1989]

$$\boxed{\begin{array}{c}\text{solutions of}\\ \text{global SUSY}\\ F\ \text{term eq.'s}\end{array}} = \boxed{\begin{array}{c}\text{stationary points}\\ \text{of supergravity}\\ \text{scalar potential}\end{array}}$$

Approximate R symmetries

- ☞ Consider now the case of an **approximate** R symmetry, i.e. explicit R symmetry breaking terms appear at order N in the fields ϕ_i

Approximate R symmetries

- ☞ Consider now the case of an **approximate** R symmetry, i.e. explicit R symmetry breaking terms appear at order N in the fields ϕ_i
- ☞ This allows us to avoid certain problems:
  - for a continuous $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry we would have
    - a supersymmetric ground state with $\langle\mathscr{W}\rangle = 0$ and $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ spontaneously broken
    - a problematic R Goldstone boson

Approximate R symmetries

- ☞ Consider now the case of an **approximate** R symmetry, i.e. explicit R symmetry breaking terms appear at order N in the fields ϕ_i
- ☞ This allows us to avoid certain problems:
  - for a continuous $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry we would have
    - a supersymmetric ground state with $\langle\mathscr{W}\rangle = 0$ and $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ spontaneously broken
    - a problematic R Goldstone boson
  - however, for an **approximate** $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry one has
    - Goldstone boson massive and harmless
    - a nontrivial VEV of $\mathscr{W}$ at order N in ϕ VEVs

$$\langle\mathscr{W}\rangle \sim \langle\phi\rangle^N$$

Approximate R symmetries

- ☞ Consider now the case of an **approximate** R symmetry, i.e. explicit R symmetry breaking terms appear at order N in the fields ϕ_i

- ☞ This allows us to avoid certain problems:
  - for a continuous $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry we would have
    - a supersymmetric ground state with $\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$ and $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ spontaneously broken
    - a problematic R Goldstone boson
  - however, for an **approximate** $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry one has
    - Goldstone boson massive and harmless
    - a nontrivial VEV of $\mathscr{W}$ at order N in ϕ VEVs

$$\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle \sim \langle \phi \rangle^N$$

- ☞ Such **approximate** $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetries can be a consequence of discrete $\mathbb{Z}_N^R$ symmetries

Approximate R symmetries

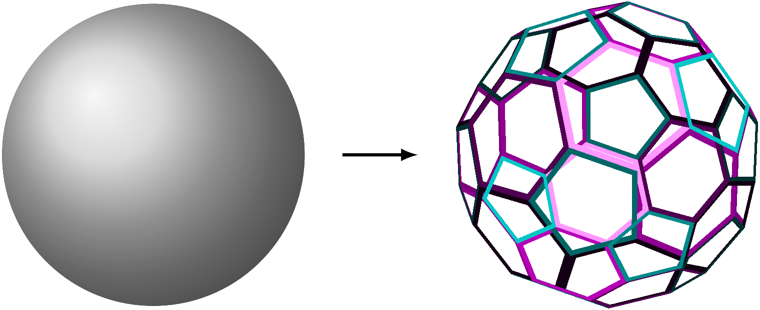
- ☞ Consider now the case of an **approximate** R symmetry, i.e. explicit R symmetry breaking terms appear at order N in the fields ϕ_i
- ☞ This allows us to avoid certain problems:
  - for a continuous $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry we would have
    - a supersymmetric ground state with $\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle = 0$ and $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ spontaneously broken
    - a problematic R Goldstone boson
  - however, for an **approximate** $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetry one has
    - Goldstone boson massive and harmless
    - a nontrivial VEV of $\mathscr{W}$ at order N in ϕ VEVs
      $$\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle \sim \langle \phi \rangle^N$$
- ☞ Such **approximate** $\mathrm{U}(1)_R$ symmetries can be a consequence of discrete $\mathbb{Z}_N^R$ symmetries
- ☞ Confirmed in various field–theoretic examples

back

Explicit
string theory
realization

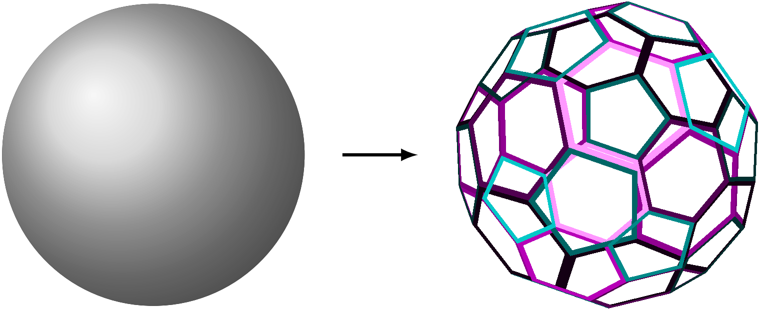
Origin of high–power discrete R symmetries

- ☞ Discrete R symmetries arise as remnants of Lorentz symmetries of compact space



Origin of high–power discrete R symmetries

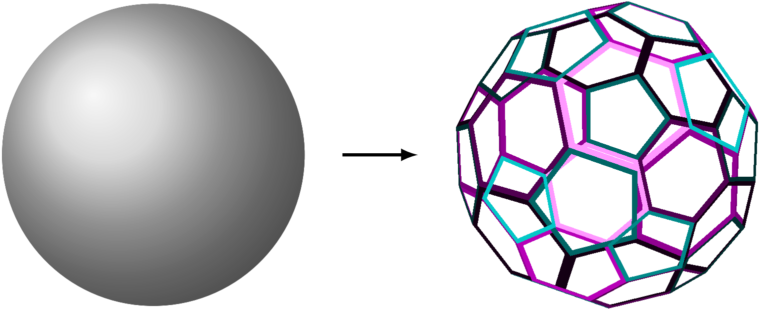
- ☞ Discrete R symmetries arise as remnants of Lorentz symmetries of compact space



- ☞ Orbifolds break $\mathrm{SO}(6) \simeq \mathrm{SU}(4)$ Lorentz symmetry of compact space to discrete subgroups

Origin of high–power discrete R symmetries

- Discrete R symmetries arise as remnants of Lorentz symmetries of compact space



- Orbifolds break $\mathrm{SO}(6) \simeq \mathrm{SU}(4)$ Lorentz symmetry of compact space to discrete subgroups
- For example: a $\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold plane leads to $\mathbb{Z}_4^R$ symmetry

An example

Brümmer, Kappl, M.R. & Schmidt-Hoberg [2010]

- ☞ Studied the previous example ('heterotic benchmark model IA') with 23 SM singlets s_i getting a VEV

An example

Brümmer, Kappl, M.R. & Schmidt-Hoberg [2010]

- ☞ Studied the previous example (‘heterotic benchmark model IA’) with 23 SM singlets s_i getting a VEV
- ☞ R symmetry breaking terms appear at order 9

An example

Brümmer, Kappl, M.R. & Schmidt-Hoberg [2010]

- ☞ Studied the previous example ('heterotic benchmark model IA') with 23 SM singlets s_i getting a VEV
- ☞ R symmetry breaking terms appear at order 9
- ☞ $D_a = 0$ as well as global $F_i = 0$ at order 9 explicitly solved

An example

Brümmer, Kappl, M.R. & Schmidt-Hoberg [2010]

- ☞ Studied the previous example ('heterotic benchmark model IA') with 23 SM singlets s_i getting a VEV
- ☞ R symmetry breaking terms appear at order 9
- ☞ $D_a = 0$ as well as global $F_i = 0$ at order 9 explicitly solved
- ☞ Search for solutions $|s_i| < 1$, and find/argue that they exist

Note: in order
to prove the existence
a full understanding
of coupling coefficients
is required

An example

Brümmer, Kappl, M.R. & Schmidt-Hoberg [2010]

- ☞ Studied the previous example (‘heterotic benchmark model IA’) with 23 SM singlets s_i getting a VEV
- ☞ R symmetry breaking terms appear at order 9
- ☞ $D_a = 0$ as well as global $F_i = 0$ at order 9 explicitly solved
- ☞ Search for solutions $|s_i| < 1$, and find/argue that they exist
- ☞ All fields acquire positive m^2
  (no flat directions; not destroyed by supergravity corrections)

An example

Brümmer, Kappl, M.R. & Schmidt-Hoberg [2010]

- ☞ Studied the previous example ('heterotic benchmark model IA') with 23 SM singlets s_i getting a VEV
- ☞ R symmetry breaking terms appear at order 9
- ☞ $D_a = 0$ as well as global $F_i = 0$ at order 9 explicitly solved
- ☞ Search for solutions $|s_i| < 1$, and find/argue that they exist
- ☞ All fields acquire positive m^2
  (no flat directions; not destroyed by supergravity corrections)
- ☞ Superpotential VEV $\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle \sim \langle s_i \rangle^9 \ll 1$ (as expected)

An example

Brümmer, Kappl, M.R. & Schmidt-Hoberg [2010]

- ☞ Studied the previous example ('heterotic benchmark model IA') with 23 SM singlets s_i getting a VEV
- ☞ R symmetry breaking terms appear at order 9
- ☞ $D_a = 0$ as well as global $F_i = 0$ at order 9 explicitly solved
- ☞ Search for solutions $|s_i| < 1$, and find/argue that they exist
- ☞ All fields acquire positive m^2
  (no flat directions; not destroyed by supergravity corrections)
- ☞ Superpotential VEV $\langle \mathscr{W} \rangle \sim \langle s_i \rangle^9 \ll 1$ (as expected)

bottom–line:

straightforward embedding in heterotic orbifolds

General picture

☞ The more fields are switched on, the lower N we obtain examples:

- model with 23 fields $\curvearrowright$ $N = 9$
- model with 7 fields $\curvearrowright$ $N = 26$

General picture

☞ The more fields are switched on, the lower N we obtain examples:

- model with 23 fields $\curvearrowright$ $N = 9$
- model with 7 fields $\curvearrowright$ $N = 26$

☞ Suppressed s_i in accord with scale set by Fayet–Iliopoulos term (i.e. $\langle s_i \rangle \sim 0.3$)

General picture

☞ The more fields are switched on, the lower N we obtain examples:

- model with 23 fields $\curvearrowright$ $N = 9$
- model with 7 fields $\curvearrowright$ $N = 26$

☞ Suppressed s_i in accord with scale set by Fayet–Iliopoulos term (i.e. $\langle s_i \rangle \sim 0.3$)

☞ One approximate Goldstone mode η

$m_\eta \;\sim\; \langle \mathscr{W} \rangle / \langle s \rangle^2$ …somewhat heavier than the gravitino

General picture

- ☞ The more fields are switched on, the lower N we obtain examples:
  - model with 23 fields $\curvearrowright$ $N = 9$
  - model with 7 fields $\curvearrowright$ $N = 26$
- ☞ Suppressed s_i in accord with scale set by Fayet–Iliopoulos term (i.e. $\langle s_i\rangle \sim 0.3$)
- ☞ One approximate Goldstone mode η

  $m_\eta \;\sim\; \langle\mathscr{W}\rangle/\langle s\rangle^2$ …somewhat heavier than the gravitino
- ☞ In most examples: all other s_i fields acquire masses $\gg m_\eta$
  i.e. isolated points in s_i space with $F_i = D_a = 0$

General picture

- ☞ The more fields are switched on, the lower N we obtain examples:
  - model with 23 fields $\curvearrowright$ $N = 9$
  - model with 7 fields $\curvearrowright$ $N = 26$
- ☞ Suppressed s_i in accord with scale set by Fayet–Iliopoulos term (i.e. $\langle s_i \rangle \sim 0.3$)
- ☞ One approximate Goldstone mode η

  $m_\eta \;\sim\; \langle \mathscr{W} \rangle / \langle s \rangle^2$ . . . somewhat heavier than the gravitino
- ☞ In most examples: all other s_i fields acquire masses $\gg m_\eta$ i.e. isolated points in s_i space with $F_i = D_a = 0$
- ☞ Minima survive supergravity corrections

back

A_4 models

from the

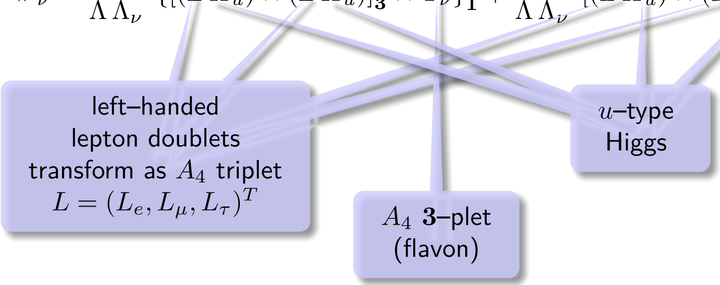
bottom–up

A popular example: A_4

Ma & Rajasekaran [2001], Babu, Ma & Valle [2003b], Hirsch, Romao, Skadhauge, Valle & Villanova del Moral [2004]
Altarelli & Feruglio [2005] ,. . .

☞ Superpotential couplings

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu = \frac{\lambda_1}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\,\{[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)]_{\mathbf{3}}\times\Phi_\nu\}_{\mathbf{1}}+\frac{\lambda_2}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\,[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)]_{\mathbf{1}}\;\xi$$



left–handed
lepton doublets
transform as A_4 triplet
$L = (L_e, L_\mu, L_\tau)^T$

u–type
Higgs

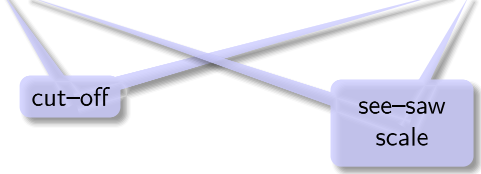
A_4 $\mathbf{3}$–plet
(flavon)

A popular example: A_4

Altarelli & Feruglio [2005] ,...

- ☞ Superpotential couplings

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu = \frac{\lambda_1}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\,\left\{\left[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)\right]_{\mathbf{3}}\times\Phi_\nu\right\}_{\mathbf{1}} + \frac{\lambda_2}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\,\left[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)\right]_{\mathbf{1}}\,\xi$$



cut–off

see–saw scale

A popular example: A_4

Altarelli & Feruglio [2005] ,. . .

☞ Superpotential couplings

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu = \frac{\lambda_1}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\,\{[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)]_{\mathbf{3}}\times\Phi_\nu\}_{\mathbf{1}} + \frac{\lambda_2}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\,[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)]_{\mathbf{1}}\,\xi$$

triplet contraction

singlet contraction

A popular example: A_4

Altarelli & Feruglio [2005] ,...

- ☞ Superpotential couplings

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu = \frac{\lambda_1}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\left\{\left[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)\right]_{\mathbf{3}}\times\Phi_\nu\right\}_{\mathbf{1}} + \frac{\lambda_2}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\left[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)\right]_{\mathbf{1}}\,\xi$$

$$\mathscr{W}_e = \frac{h_e}{\Lambda}\,(\Phi_e\times L)_{\mathbf{1}}\;H_d\,e_\mathrm{R} + \frac{h_\mu}{\Lambda}\,(\Phi_e\times L)_{\mathbf{1}'}\;H_d\,\mu_\mathrm{R} + \frac{h_\tau}{\Lambda}\,(\Phi_e\times L)_{\mathbf{1}''}\;H_d\,\tau_\mathrm{R}$$

another triplet flavon

singlet″ contraction

singlet′ contraction

A popular example: A_4

Altarelli & Feruglio [2005] ,...

- Superpotential couplings

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu = \frac{\lambda_1}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\,\{[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)]_{\mathbf{3}}\times\Phi_\nu\}_{\mathbf{1}} + \frac{\lambda_2}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\,[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)]_{\mathbf{1}}\;\xi$$

$$\mathscr{W}_e = \frac{h_e}{\Lambda}\,(\Phi_e\times L)_{\mathbf{1}}\;H_d\,e_{\mathrm{R}} + \frac{h_\mu}{\Lambda}\,(\Phi_e\times L)_{\mathbf{1}'}\;H_d\,\mu_{\mathrm{R}} + \frac{h_\tau}{\Lambda}\,(\Phi_e\times L)_{\mathbf{1}''}\;H_d\,\tau_{\mathrm{R}}$$

$$\begin{tikzcd}
 & \boxed{A_4 = G_{\mathrm{F}}} \arrow[dl, "\langle\Phi_e\rangle"'] \arrow[dr, "\langle\Phi_\nu\rangle"] & \\
\boxed{G_{\mathrm{e}} = \mathbb{Z}_2} & & \boxed{G_\nu = \mathbb{Z}_3}
\end{tikzcd}$$

- A_4 symmetry broken by VEVs of flavons

$$\langle\Phi_\nu\rangle = (v,v,v)$$
$$\langle\Phi_e\rangle = (v',0,0)$$
$$\langle\xi\rangle = w$$

A popular example: A_4

Altarelli & Feruglio [2005] , . . .

- Superpotential couplings

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu = \frac{\lambda_1}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\left\{\left[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)\right]_{\mathbf{3}}\times\Phi_\nu\right\}_{\mathbf{1}} + \frac{\lambda_2}{\Lambda\,\Lambda_\nu}\left[(L\,H_u)\times(L\,H_u)\right]_{\mathbf{1}}\,\xi$$

$$\mathscr{W}_e = \frac{h_e}{\Lambda}\,(\Phi_e\times L)_{\mathbf{1}}\;H_d\,e_\mathrm{R} + \frac{h_\mu}{\Lambda}\,(\Phi_e\times L)_{\mathbf{1}'}\;H_d\,\mu_\mathrm{R} + \frac{h_\tau}{\Lambda}\,(\Phi_e\times L)_{\mathbf{1}''}\;H_d\,\tau_\mathrm{R}$$

$$\begin{tikzcd}
 & \boxed{A_4 = G_\mathrm{F}} \arrow[dl, "\langle\Phi_e\rangle"'] \arrow[dr, "\langle\Phi_\nu\rangle"] & \\
\boxed{G_\mathrm{e} = \mathbb{Z}_2} & & \boxed{G_\nu = \mathbb{Z}_3}
\end{tikzcd}$$

- A_4 symmetry broken by VEVs of flavons

$$\langle\Phi_\nu\rangle = (v,v,v)$$
$$\langle\Phi_e\rangle = (v',0,0)$$
$$\langle\xi\rangle = w$$

- ➥ Tri–bi–maximal mixing (TBM)

Structure lepton masses

Altarelli & Feruglio [2005]

- ☞ After inserting the flavon VEVs

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu = (L_e\,H_u, L_\mu\,H_u, L_\tau\,H_u) \begin{pmatrix} a+2d & -d & -d \\ -d & 2d & a-d \\ -d & a-d & 2d \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} L_e\,H_u \\ L_\mu\,H_u \\ L_\tau\,H_u \end{pmatrix}$$

$$a = 2\lambda_1\,\lambda_2\,\frac{w}{\Lambda}\,\frac{1}{\Lambda_\nu}$$

$$d = \frac{\lambda_1}{3}\,\frac{v}{\Lambda}\,\frac{1}{\Lambda_\nu}$$

Structure lepton masses

Altarelli & Feruglio [2005]

- After inserting the flavon VEVs

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu = (L_e\,H_u, L_\mu\,H_u, L_\tau\,H_u) \begin{pmatrix} a+2d & -d & -d \\ -d & 2d & a-d \\ -d & a-d & 2d \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} L_e\,H_u \\ L_\mu\,H_u \\ L_\tau\,H_u \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\mathscr{W}_e = (L_e, L_\mu, L_\tau) \begin{pmatrix} y_e & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & y_\mu & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & y_\tau \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} e_\mathrm{R} \\ \mu_\mathrm{R} \\ \tau_\mathrm{R} \end{pmatrix} H_d$$

$$y_{e,\mu,\tau} = h_{e,\mu,\tau}\, v'/\Lambda$$

Structure lepton masses

Altarelli & Feruglio [2005]

- After inserting the flavon VEVs

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu = (L_e\,H_u, L_\mu\,H_u, L_\tau\,H_u) \begin{pmatrix} a+2d & -d & -d \\ -d & 2d & a-d \\ -d & a-d & 2d \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} L_e\,H_u \\ L_\mu\,H_u \\ L_\tau\,H_u \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\mathscr{W}_e = (L_e, L_\mu, L_\tau) \begin{pmatrix} y_e & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & y_\mu & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & y_\tau \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} e_\mathrm{R} \\ \mu_\mathrm{R} \\ \tau_\mathrm{R} \end{pmatrix} H_d$$

- After inserting the electroweak VEVs

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu \xrightarrow{H_u \to (0, v_u)^T} \frac{v_u^2}{2}\,(\nu_e, \nu_\mu, \nu_\tau) \begin{pmatrix} a+2d & -d & -d \\ -d & 2d & a-d \\ -d & a-d & 2d \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} \nu_e \\ \nu_\mu \\ \nu_\tau \end{pmatrix}$$

Tri–bi–maximal mixing (TBM)

Harrison, Perkins & Scott [2002]

☞ Structure of neutrino masses (in the basis in which the charged lepton masses are diagonal)

$$m_\nu \propto \begin{pmatrix} a+2d & -d & -d \\ -d & 2d & a-d \\ -d & a-d & 2d \end{pmatrix}$$

Tri–bi–maximal mixing (TBM)

Harrison, Perkins & Scott [2002]

- ☞ Structure of neutrino masses (in the basis in which the charged lepton masses are diagonal)

$$m_\nu \propto \begin{pmatrix} a+2d & -d & -d \\ -d & 2d & a-d \\ -d & a-d & 2d \end{pmatrix}$$

- ☞ Tri–bi–maximal (P)MNS mixing matrix

$$U_{\mathrm{(P)MNS}}^{\mathrm{TBM}} = \begin{pmatrix} \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} & \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}} & 0 \\ -\frac{1}{\sqrt{6}} & \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}} & -\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \\ -\frac{1}{\sqrt{6}} & \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}} & \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \end{pmatrix}$$

- Mixing angles: $\begin{cases} \theta_{12} \simeq 35^\circ \\ \theta_{13} = 0 \\ \theta_{23} = 45^\circ \end{cases}$
- δ undefined for $\theta_{13} = 0$

Tri–bi–maximal mixing (TBM)

Harrison, Perkins & Scott [2002]

- ☞ Structure of neutrino masses (in the basis in which the charged lepton masses are diagonal)

$$m_\nu \propto \begin{pmatrix} a+2d & -d & -d \\ -d & 2d & a-d \\ -d & a-d & 2d \end{pmatrix}$$

- ☞ Tri–bi–maximal (P)MNS mixing matrix

$$U^{\mathrm{TBM}}_{\mathrm{(P)MNS}} = \begin{pmatrix} \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} & \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}} & 0 \\ -\frac{1}{\sqrt{6}} & \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}} & -\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \\ -\frac{1}{\sqrt{6}} & \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}} & \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \end{pmatrix}$$

- Mixing angles: $\begin{cases} \theta_{12} \simeq 35^\circ \\ \theta_{13} = 0 \\ \theta_{23} = 45^\circ \end{cases}$
- δ undefined for $\theta_{13} = 0$

- ☞ Unrealistic but close to the actual values

back

“Corrections”

to

model

predictions

‘Corrections’ to model predictions

- ☞ Many analyses: include high order terms in holomorphic superpotential

‘Corrections’ to model predictions

- ☞ Many analyses: include high order terms in holomorphic superpotential
- ☞ However: possible to construct models where higher order holomorphic superpotential terms vanish to all orders

'Corrections' to model predictions

- ☞ Many analyses: include high order terms in holomorphic superpotential
- ☞ However: possible to construct models where higher order holomorphic superpotential terms vanish to all orders
- ☞ Also popular: contribution from right–handed sector (may be determined by symmetries as well)

'Corrections' to model predictions

- ☞ Many analyses: include high order terms in holomorphic superpotential
- ☞ However: possible to construct models where higher order holomorphic superpotential terms vanish to all orders
- ☞ Also popular: contribution from right–handed sector (may be determined by symmetries as well)

? How predictive are such models?

Kähler corrections

e.g. Leurer, Nir & Seiberg [1994]

- ☞ Superpotential: holomorphic, e.g.

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu = \frac{1}{2}\left(L\,H_u\right)^T\,\kappa_\nu\,L\,H_u$$

Kähler corrections

e.g. Leurer, Nir & Seiberg [1994]

- ☞ Superpotential: holomorphic, e.g.

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu \;=\; \frac{1}{2}\,(L\,H_u)^T\;\kappa_\nu\,L\,H_u$$

- ☞ Kähler potential: non–holomorphic (real analytic)

$$K \;=\; K_\mathrm{canonical}+\Delta K$$

Kähler corrections

e.g. Leurer, Nir & Seiberg [1994]

- Superpotential: holomorphic, e.g.

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu \;=\; \frac{1}{2}\,(L\,H_u)^T\;\kappa_\nu\,L\,H_u$$

- Kähler potential: non–holomorphic (real analytic)

$$K \;=\; K_{\text{canonical}} + \Delta K$$

- Canonical Kähler potential

$$K_{\text{canonical}} \;\supset\; \sum_f \left[(L_f)^\dagger\;L_f + (R_f)^\dagger\;R_f\right]$$

charged
lepton singlets
$R = (e_{\mathrm{R}}, \mu_{\mathrm{R}}, \tau_{\mathrm{R}})$

Kähler corrections

e.g. Leurer, Nir & Seiberg [1994]

- Superpotential: holomorphic, e.g.

$$\mathscr{W}_\nu \;=\; \frac{1}{2}\left(L\,H_u\right)^T\;\kappa_\nu\,L\,H_u$$

- Kähler potential: non–holomorphic (real analytic)

$$K \;=\; K_{\mathrm{canonical}} + \Delta K$$

- Canonical Kähler potential

$$K_{\mathrm{canonical}} \;\supset\; \sum_f \left[(L_f)^\dagger\,L_f + (R_f)^\dagger\;R_f\right]$$

- Correction

$$\Delta K \;=\; \sum_{f,g}\left[L_f^\dagger\,P_{f\,g}\,L_g + R_f^\dagger\,Q_{f\,g}\,R_g\right]$$

Hermitean matrices composed of e.g. flavons

Back to the A_4 example

- ☞ Kähler potential may contain

$$\Delta K_{\Phi}^{\text{linear}} \supset \sum_{i=1}^{2} \frac{1}{\Lambda}\,\kappa_{\Phi,\text{linear}}^{(i)}\,L^{\dagger}\,(L\Phi)_{\mathbf{3}_i} + \text{h.c.}$$

one of
the triplet
flavons

triplet contractions from
$\mathbf{3}\times\mathbf{3} \;=\; \mathbf{1}+\mathbf{1}'+\mathbf{1}''+\mathbf{3}_1+\mathbf{3}_2$

Back to the A_4 example

- ☞ Kähler potential may contain

$$\Delta K_\Phi^{\mathrm{linear}} \supset \sum_{i=1}^{2} \frac{1}{\Lambda}\, \kappa^{(i)}_{\Phi,\mathrm{linear}}\, L^\dagger\ (L\Phi)_{\mathbf{3}_i} + \mathrm{h.c.}$$

- ☞ However, such terms may be forbidden by additional symmetries

A_4 example continued

☞ 'Quadratic' Kähler corrections

$$\Delta K_{\Phi}^{\mathrm{quadratic}} \supset \frac{1}{\Lambda^2}\sum_{\boldsymbol{X}}^{6} \kappa_{\Phi,\mathrm{quadratic}}^{\boldsymbol{X}} \left(L\Phi\right)^{\dagger}_{\boldsymbol{X}} \left(L\Phi\right)_{\boldsymbol{X}} + \text{h.c.}$$

one of the triplet flavons

triplet contractions from $\boldsymbol{3}\times\boldsymbol{3} \;=\; \boldsymbol{1}+\boldsymbol{1}'+\boldsymbol{1}''+\boldsymbol{3}_1+\boldsymbol{3}_2$

A_4 example continued

☞ 'Quadratic' Kähler corrections

$$\Delta K_{\Phi}^{\text{quadratic}} \supset \frac{1}{\Lambda^2}\sum_{\boldsymbol{X}}^{6} \kappa_{\Phi,\text{quadratic}}^{\boldsymbol{X}} \left(L\Phi\right)_{\boldsymbol{X}}^{\dagger} \left(L\Phi\right)_{\boldsymbol{X}} + \text{h.c.}$$

☞ Such terms cannot be forbidden by any (conventional) symmetry

A_4 example continued

- ☞ 'Quadratic' Kähler corrections

$$\Delta K_{\Phi}^{\text{quadratic}} \supset \frac{1}{\Lambda^2}\sum_{\boldsymbol{X}}^{6} \kappa_{\Phi,\text{quadratic}}^{\boldsymbol{X}} \left(L\Phi\right)_{\boldsymbol{X}}^{\dagger}\left(L\Phi\right)_{\boldsymbol{X}} + \text{h.c.}$$

- ☞ Such terms cannot be forbidden by any (conventional) symmetry

➥ Kähler corrections when flavon fields attain their VEVs

A_4 example continued

- ☞ 'Quadratic' Kähler corrections

$$\Delta K_{\Phi}^{\mathrm{quadratic}} \supset \frac{1}{\Lambda^2}\sum_{\boldsymbol{X}}^{6} \kappa_{\Phi,\mathrm{quadratic}}^{\boldsymbol{X}} \left(L\Phi\right)^{\dagger}_{\boldsymbol{X}} \left(L\Phi\right)_{\boldsymbol{X}} + \text{h.c.}$$

- ☞ Such terms cannot be forbidden by any (conventional) symmetry
- ➥ Kähler corrections when flavon fields attain their VEVs
- ☞ Additional parameters $\kappa_{\Phi}^{\boldsymbol{X}}$ reduce the predictivity of the scheme

Linear independent flavon corrections

- ☞ From $\langle\Phi_e\rangle$

$$P_{\mathrm{I}} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad P_{\mathrm{II}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$P_{\mathrm{III}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

- ☞ From $\langle\Phi_\nu\rangle$

$$P_{\mathrm{IV}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad P_{\mathrm{V}} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathrm{i} & -\mathrm{i} \\ -\mathrm{i} & 0 & \mathrm{i} \\ \mathrm{i} & -\mathrm{i} & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

Change of θ_{13} in the A_4 model

Chen, Fallbacher, M.R. & Staudt [2012], Chen, Fallbacher, Omura, M.R. & Staudt [2013a]

☞ Consider change induced by P_V correction

Change of θ_{13} in the A_4 model

Chen, Fallbacher, M.R. & Staudt [2012], Chen, Fallbacher, Omura, M.R. & Staudt [2013a]

- ☞ Consider change induced by P_{V} correction
- ☞ Kähler metric of the form $\mathcal{K}_L = 1 - 2x\,P$ with

$$P = \frac{3\,\sqrt{3}}{2}\begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathrm{i} & -\mathrm{i} \\ -\mathrm{i} & 0 & \mathrm{i} \\ \mathrm{i} & -\mathrm{i} & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

Change of θ_{13} in the A_4 model

Chen, Fallbacher, M.R. & Staudt [2012], Chen, Fallbacher, Omura, M.R. & Staudt [2013a]

- ☞ Consider change induced by P_V correction
- ☞ Kähler metric of the form $\mathcal{K}_L = 1 - 2x\,P$ with

$$P = \frac{3\sqrt{3}}{2}\begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathrm{i} & -\mathrm{i} \\ -\mathrm{i} & 0 & \mathrm{i} \\ \mathrm{i} & -\mathrm{i} & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

- ☞ The analytic formula evaluated at tri–bi–maximal mixing reads $(m_e \ll m_\mu \ll m_\tau)$

$$\Delta\theta_{13} = \kappa_\mathrm{V} \cdot \frac{v^2}{\Lambda^2} \cdot 3\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}\left(\frac{2m_1}{m_1 + m_3} + \frac{m_e^2}{m_\mu^2 - m_e^2} + \frac{m_e^2}{m_\tau^2 - m_e^2}\right)$$

Change of θ_{13} in the A_4 model

Chen, Fallbacher, M.R. & Staudt [2012], Chen, Fallbacher, Omura, M.R. & Staudt [2013a]

- ☞ Consider change induced by P_{V} correction
- ☞ Kähler metric of the form $\mathcal{K}_L = 1 - 2x\,P$ with

$$P \;=\; \frac{3\,\sqrt{3}}{2}\begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathrm{i} & -\mathrm{i} \\ -\mathrm{i} & 0 & \mathrm{i} \\ \mathrm{i} & -\mathrm{i} & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

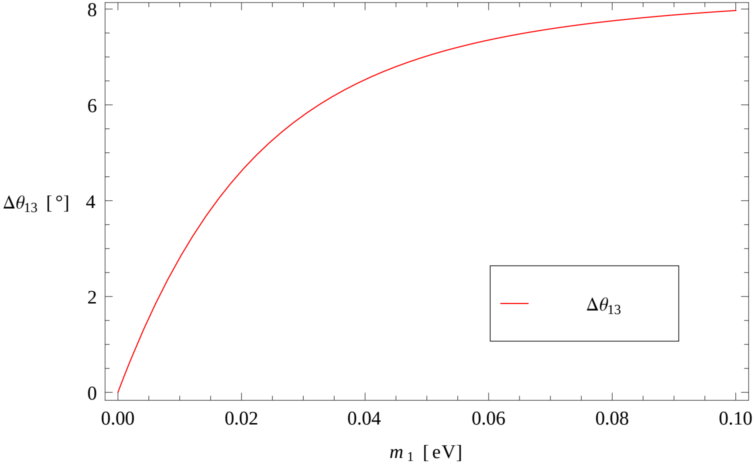
- ☞ The analytic formula evaluated at tri–bi–maximal mixing reads $(m_e \ll m_\mu \ll m_\tau)$

$$\Delta\theta_{13} \;=\; \kappa_{\mathrm{V}}\cdot\frac{v^2}{\Lambda^2}\cdot 3\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}}\left(\frac{2m_1}{m_1+m_3}+\frac{m_e^2}{m_\mu^2-m_e^2}+\frac{m_e^2}{m_\tau^2-m_e^2}\right)$$

- ☞ Complex P matrix $\curvearrowright$ $\cancel{\mathcal{CP}}$ is induced: $\delta \;\approx\; \pi/2$

Change of θ_{13}

☞ $\Delta\theta_{13}$ for Kähler coefficient $\kappa_{\mathrm{V}} = 1$, $v/\Lambda = 0.2$



Impact of “corrections”

- ☞ The majority of the bottom–up models is vulnerable to such corrections, i.e. the change of the predicted values is much larger than the experimental accuracy

Impact of "corrections"

- ☞ The majority of the bottom–up models is vulnerable to such corrections, i.e. the change of the predicted values is much larger than the experimental accuracy
- ☞ A UV completion, such as the one that may be provided by string theory, can possibly help us to make the models more predictive

Impact of "corrections"

- ☞ The majority of the bottom–up models is vulnerable to such corrections, i.e. the change of the predicted values is much larger than the experimental accuracy
- ☞ A UV completion, such as the one that may be provided by string theory, can possibly help us to make the models more predictive
- ☞ There are works which compute some of the relevant terms

e.g. Antoniadis, Gava, Narain & Taylor [1994], Olguín-Trejo & Ramos-Sánchez [2017]

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation

from

finite groups

(Details)

The canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

- ☞ Scalar field operator

$$\phi(x) = \int \mathrm{d}^3 p \, \frac{1}{2E_{\vec{p}}} \, \left[a(\vec{p}) \, \mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i}\, p\cdot x} + b^\dagger(\vec{p}) \, \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\, p\cdot x} \right]$$

annihilates particle

The canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

- Scalar field operator

$$\phi(x) = \int \mathrm{d}^3 p \, \frac{1}{2E_{\vec{p}}} \, \left[a(\vec{p}) \, \mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i}\, p\cdot x} + b^\dagger(\vec{p}) \, \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\, p\cdot x} \right]$$

creates anti–particle

The canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

- Scalar field operator

$$\phi(x) = \int \mathrm{d}^3 p \, \frac{1}{2E_{\vec{p}}} \, \left[a(\vec{p})\,\mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i}\,p\cdot x} + b^\dagger(\vec{p})\,\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\,p\cdot x}\right]$$

- $\mathcal{CP}$ exchanges particles & anti–particles

$$\begin{aligned} (\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1}\, a(\vec{p}) \boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} &= \eta_{\mathcal{CP}}\, b(-\vec{p}) \quad & \quad (\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1}\, a^\dagger(\vec{p})\, \boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} &= \eta^*_{\mathcal{CP}}\, b^\dagger(-\vec{p}) \\ (\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1}\, b(\vec{p})\, \boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} &= \eta^*_{\mathcal{CP}}\, a(-\vec{p}) \quad & \quad (\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1}\, b^\dagger(\vec{p})\, \boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} &= \eta_{\mathcal{CP}}\, a^\dagger(-\vec{p}) \end{aligned}$$

phase factor

The canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

- Scalar field operator

$$\phi(x) = \int \mathrm{d}^3 p \, \frac{1}{2E_{\vec{p}}} \, \left[\boldsymbol{a}(\vec{p}) \, \mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i}\, p\cdot x} + \boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(\vec{p}) \, \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\, p\cdot x}\right]$$

- $\mathcal{CP}$ exchanges particles & anti–particles

$$\begin{array}{lcl} (\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1} \, \boldsymbol{a}(\vec{p}) \boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} = \eta_{\mathcal{CP}} \, \boldsymbol{b}(-\vec{p}) & \& & (\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1} \, \boldsymbol{a}^\dagger(\vec{p}) \, \boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} = \eta_{\mathcal{CP}}^* \, \boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(-\vec{p}) \\ (\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1} \, \boldsymbol{b}(\vec{p}) \, \boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} = \eta_{\mathcal{CP}}^* \, \boldsymbol{a}(-\vec{p}) & \& & (\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1} \, \boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(\vec{p}) \, \boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} = \eta_{\mathcal{CP}} \, \boldsymbol{a}^\dagger(-\vec{p}) \end{array}$$

- $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation of (scalar) fields

freedom of re–phasing fields

$$\phi(x) \xmapsto{\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}}} \eta_{\mathcal{CP}} \, \phi^*(\mathcal{P}x)$$

Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

☞ Setting w/ discrete symmetry G

Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

vector of creation operators

- ☞ Setting w/ discrete symmetry G
- ☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$(\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1}\,\boldsymbol{a}(\vec{p})\,\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\boldsymbol{b}(-\vec{p}) \quad \& \quad (\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1}\,\boldsymbol{a}^{\dagger}(\vec{p})\,\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} = \boldsymbol{b}^{\dagger}(-\vec{p})\,U_{\mathcal{CP}}{}^{\dagger}$$

$$(\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1}\,\boldsymbol{b}(\vec{p})\,\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} = \boldsymbol{a}(-\vec{p})\,U_{\mathcal{CP}}{}^{\dagger} \quad \& \quad (\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}})^{-1}\,\boldsymbol{b}^{\dagger}(\vec{p})\,\boldsymbol{\mathcal{CP}} = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\boldsymbol{a}^{\dagger}(-\vec{p})$$

vector of annihilation operators

unitary matrix

Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- Setting w/ discrete symmetry G
- Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation
- Invariant contraction/coupling in A_4 or T'

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

$$\left[\phi_{\mathbf{1}_2} \otimes (x_{\mathbf{3}} \otimes y_{\mathbf{3}})_{\mathbf{1}_1}\right]_{\mathbf{1}_0} \propto \phi\,\left(x_1\,y_1 + \omega^2\,x_2\,y_2 + \omega^2\,x_3\,y_3\right)$$

$\omega = \mathrm{e}^{2\pi\,\mathrm{i}/3}$

Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- ☞ Setting w/ discrete symmetry G
- ☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation
- ☞ Invariant contraction/coupling in A_4 or T'

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

$$\left[\phi_{\mathbf{1}_2}\otimes\left(x_{\mathbf{3}}\otimes y_{\mathbf{3}}\right)_{\mathbf{1}_1}\right]_{\mathbf{1}_0}\propto\phi\,\left(x_1\,y_1+\omega^2\,x_2\,y_2+\omega^2\,x_3\,y_3\right)$$

- ☞ Canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation maps A_4/T' invariant contraction to something non–invariant

Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- Setting w/ discrete symmetry G
- Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation
- Invariant contraction/coupling in A_4 or T'

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

$$\left[\phi_{\mathbf{1}_2} \otimes (x_{\mathbf{3}} \otimes y_{\mathbf{3}})_{\mathbf{1}_1}\right]_{\mathbf{1}_0} \propto \phi\,\left(x_1\,y_1 + \omega^2\,x_2\,y_2 + \omega^2\,x_3\,y_3\right)$$

- Canonical $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation maps A_4/T' invariant contraction to something non–invariant

➥ Need generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation $\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}$: $\phi \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} \phi^*$ as usual but

$$\begin{pmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{pmatrix} \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} \begin{pmatrix} x_1^* \\ x_3^* \\ x_2^* \end{pmatrix} \quad \& \quad \begin{pmatrix} y_1 \\ y_2 \\ y_3 \end{pmatrix} \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} \begin{pmatrix} y_1^* \\ y_3^* \\ y_2^* \end{pmatrix}$$

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

fields of the theory/model

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

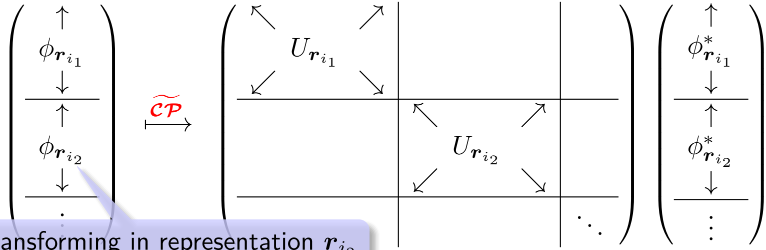
$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

$$\mathcal{P}\,(t,\vec{x}) = (t,-\vec{x})$$

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$



field transforming in representation $\boldsymbol{r}_{i_2}$

☞ $\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}$ depends on symmetry, not on model

↯ disagreement w/ Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

- Consistency condition

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\rho(g)^*\,U_{\mathcal{CP}}{}^\dagger \quad \forall\ g \in G$$

automorphism $u\ :\ G \to G$

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \;\xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}}\; U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

☞ Consistency condition

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\underbrace{\rho(g)}_{\text{representation matrix}}{}^*\,U_{\mathcal{CP}}{}^\dagger \quad \forall\; g \in G$$

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

- Consistency condition

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\rho(g)^*\,{U_{\mathcal{CP}}}^\dagger \quad \forall\ g \in G$$

block–diagonal unitary matrix

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- ☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

- ☞ Consistency condition

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\rho(g)^*\,U_{\mathcal{CP}}{}^\dagger \quad \forall\, g \in G$$

- ☞ Further properties:
  - u has to be class–inverting

    the consistency condition

    $$\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\,\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^*\,U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}^\dagger \quad \forall\, g \in G \text{ and } \forall\, i$$

    implies

    $$\begin{aligned}\chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g)) = \operatorname{tr}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g))\right] &= \operatorname{tr}\left[U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\,\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^*\,U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}^\dagger\right]\\ &= \operatorname{tr}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)\right]^* = \chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^* = \chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g^{-1}) \quad \forall\, i\end{aligned}$$

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\, \Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\, x)$$

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

☞ Consistency condition

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\, \rho(g)^*\, {U_{\mathcal{CP}}}^\dagger \quad \forall\; g \in G$$

☞ Further properties:

- u has to be class–inverting
- in all known cases, u is equivalent to an automorphism of order two

we have scanned all groups of orders up to 150 (with a few exceptions of order 128) & did not find a single example of a class–inverting automorphism of higher order that is not equivalent to another u of order 2

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

☞ Consistency condition

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\rho(g)^*\,U_{\mathcal{CP}}{}^\dagger \quad \forall\ g \in G$$

☞ Further properties:

- u has to be class–inverting
- in all known cases, u is equivalent to an automorphism of order two

bottom–line:

u has to be a class–inverting (involutory) automorphism of G

The Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA)

☞ Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA) u

Bickerstaff & Damhus [1985]

$$\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g)) = U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\,\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^*\,U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}^\dagger \quad \forall\; g \in G \text{ and } \forall\; i \qquad (\star)$$

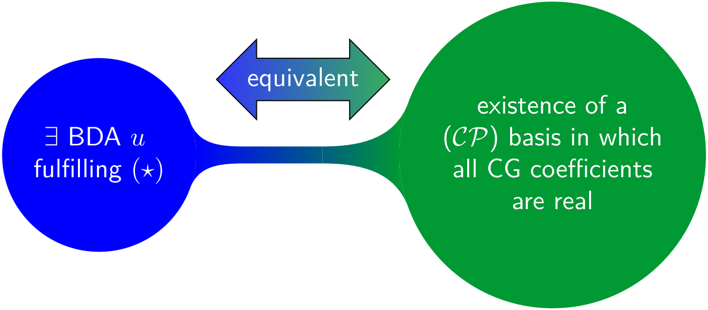
unitary & symmetric

The Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA)

- ☞ Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA) u Bickerstaff & Damhus [1985]

$$\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g)) = U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\, \rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^*\, U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}^\dagger \quad \forall\, g \in G \text{ and } \forall\, i \qquad (\star)$$

- ☞ BDA vs. Clebsch–Gordan (CG) coefficients



equivalent

$\exists$ BDA u fulfilling $(\star)$

existence of a $(\mathcal{CP})$ basis in which all CG coefficients are real

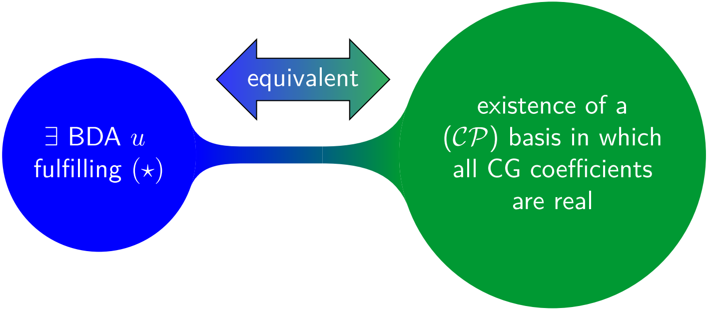
The Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA)

☞ Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA) u

Bickerstaff & Damhus [1985]

$$\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g)) = U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\,\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^*\,U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}^\dagger \quad \forall\ g\in G \text{ and } \forall\ i \qquad (\star)$$

☞ BDA vs. Clebsch–Gordan (CG) coefficients



$$\mathcal{CP}\text{ basis} \;:\; \rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g)) = \rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^* \quad \forall\ g\in G \text{ and } \forall\ i$$

The twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

☞ how can one tell whether or not a given automorphism u is a BDA?

The twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

- ☞ how can one tell whether or not a given automorphism u is a BDA?
- ☞ Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;:=\; \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g^2) = \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\mathrm{tr}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^2\right]$$

$$\mathrm{FS}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) = \begin{cases} +1, & \text{if } \boldsymbol{r}_i \text{ is a real representation,}\\ 0, & \text{if } \boldsymbol{r}_i \text{ is a complex representation,}\\ -1, & \text{if } \boldsymbol{r}_i \text{ is a pseudo–real representation.}\end{cases}$$

The twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

- how can one tell whether or not a given automorphism u is a BDA?
- Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \ := \ \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g^2) = \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\operatorname{tr}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^2\right]$$

Bickerstaff & Damhus [1985], Kawanaka & Matsuyama [1990]

- twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}_u(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \quad = \quad \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)\right]_{\alpha\beta}\,\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g))\right]_{\beta\alpha}$$

The twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

- ☞ how can one tell whether or not a given automorphism u is a BDA?
- ☞ Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;:=\; \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g^2) = \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\mathrm{tr}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^2\right]$$

Bickerstaff & Damhus [1985], Kawanaka & Matsuyama [1990]

- ☞ twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}_u(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;=\; \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)\right]_{\alpha\beta}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g))\right]_{\beta\alpha}$$

- ☞ crucial property

$$\mathrm{FS}_u(\boldsymbol{r}_i) = \begin{cases} +1 \quad \forall\; i, & \text{if } u \text{ is a BDA,} \\ +1 \text{ or } -1 \quad \forall\; i, & \text{if } u \text{ is class–inverting \& involutory,} \\ \text{different from } \pm 1, & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

Extended twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

☞ extended twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}_{u}^{(n)}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;:=\; \frac{(\dim \boldsymbol{r}_i)^{n-1}}{|G|^n} \sum_{g_1,\dots,g_n\in G} \chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g_1\,u(g_1)\cdots g_n\,u(g_n))$$

$$n = \begin{cases} \mathrm{ord}(u)/2 & \text{if } \mathrm{ord}(u) \text{ is even} \\ \mathrm{ord}(u) & \text{if } \mathrm{ord}(u) \text{ is odd} \end{cases}$$

Extended twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

- ☞ extended twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}_u^{(n)}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;:=\; \frac{(\dim \boldsymbol{r}_i)^{n-1}}{|G|^n} \sum_{g_1,\dots,g_n\in G} \chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g_1\,u(g_1)\cdots g_n\,u(g_n))$$

- ☞ crucial property

$$\mathrm{FS}_u^{(n)}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) = \begin{cases} \pm1 \quad \forall\, i, & \text{if } u \text{ is class–inverting,} \\ \text{different from } \pm1 & \\ \text{for at least one } \boldsymbol{r}_i, & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

▸ back

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- ☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\, \Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\, x)$$

fields of the theory/model

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- ☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

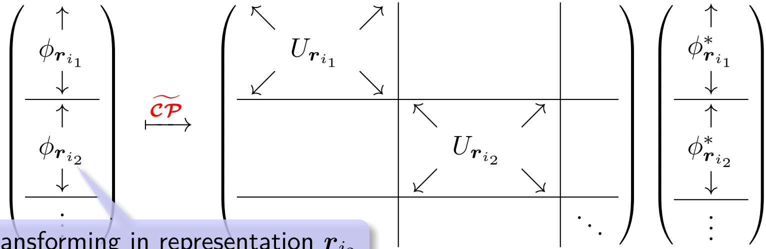
$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

$$\mathcal{P}\,(t,\vec{x}) = (t,-\vec{x})$$

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$



field transforming in representation $\boldsymbol{r}_{i_2}$

- $\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}$ depends on symmetry, not on model

disagreement w/ Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

- Consistency condition

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\rho(g)^*\,U_{\mathcal{CP}}{}^\dagger \quad \forall\; g \in G$$

automorphism $u \;:\; G \to G$

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

☞ Consistency condition

$$\rho\big(u(g)\big) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\rho(g)^*\,{U_{\mathcal{CP}}}^\dagger \quad \forall\; g\in G$$

representation matrix

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- ☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

- ☞ Consistency condition

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\rho(g)^*\,{U_{\mathcal{CP}}}^\dagger \quad \forall\ g \in G$$

block–diagonal unitary matrix

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

- Consistency condition

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\rho(g)^*\,{U_{\mathcal{CP}}}^\dagger \quad \forall\; g \in G$$

- Further properties:
  - u has to be class–inverting

    the consistency condition

    $$\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\,\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^*\,U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}^\dagger \quad \forall\; g \in G \text{ and } \forall\; i$$

    implies

    $$\begin{aligned}\chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g)) = \operatorname{tr}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g))\right] &= \operatorname{tr}\left[U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\,\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^*\,U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}^\dagger\right] \\ &= \operatorname{tr}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)\right]^* = \chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^* = \chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g^{-1}) \quad \forall\; i\end{aligned}$$

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

- Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xrightarrow{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

- Consistency condition

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\rho(g)^*\,{U_{\mathcal{CP}}}^{\dagger} \quad \forall\, g \in G$$

- Further properties:
  - u has to be class–inverting
  - in all known cases, u is equivalent to an automorphism of order two

we have scanned all groups of orders up to 150 (with a few exceptions of order 128) & did not find a single example of a class–inverting automorphism of higher order that is not equivalent to another u of order 2

Constraints on generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformations

☞ Generalized $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\Phi(x) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\mathcal{CP}}} U_{\mathrm{CP}}\,\Phi^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

Holthausen, Lindner & Schmidt [2013]

☞ Consistency condition

$$\rho\bigl(u(g)\bigr) = U_{\mathcal{CP}}\,\rho(g)^*\,U_{\mathcal{CP}}{}^\dagger \quad \forall\ g \in G$$

☞ Further properties:

- u has to be class–inverting
- in all known cases, u is equivalent to an automorphism of order two

bottom–line:

u has to be a class–inverting (involutory) automorphism of G

The Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA)

☞ Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA) u Bickerstaff & Damhus [1985]

$$\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g)) = U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\,\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^*\,U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}^\dagger \quad \forall\ g \in G \text{ and } \forall\ i \qquad (\star)$$

unitary & symmetric

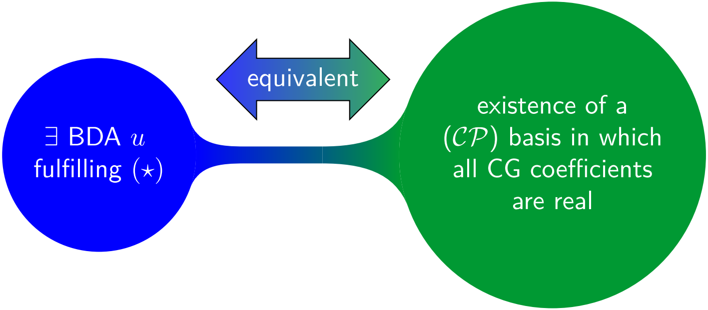
The Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA)

- Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA) u

Bickerstaff & Damhus [1985]

$$\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g)) = U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\,\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^*\,U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}^\dagger \quad \forall\; g \in G \text{ and } \forall\; i \qquad (\star)$$

- BDA vs. Clebsch–Gordan (CG) coefficients



$\exists$ BDA u fulfilling $(\star)$

equivalent

existence of a ($\mathcal{CP}$) basis in which all CG coefficients are real

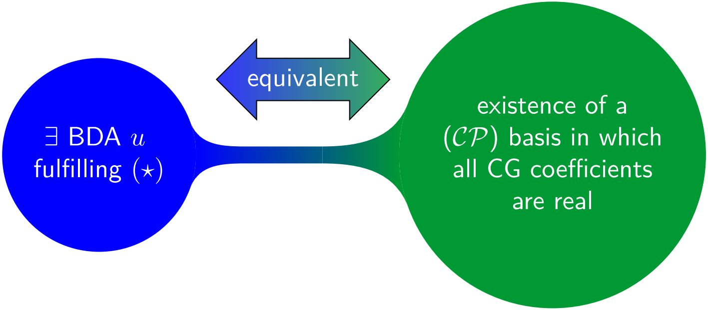
The Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA)

☞ Bickerstaff–Damhus automorphism (BDA) u

Bickerstaff & Damhus [1985]

$$\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g)) = U_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}\,\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^*\,U^{\dagger}_{\boldsymbol{r}_i} \quad \forall\ g \in G \text{ and } \forall\ i \qquad (\star)$$

☞ BDA vs. Clebsch–Gordan (CG) coefficients



$\exists$ BDA u fulfilling $(\star)$

equivalent

existence of a ($\mathcal{CP}$) basis in which all CG coefficients are real

$$\mathcal{CP} \text{ basis } : \ \rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g)) = \rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^* \quad \forall\ g \in G \text{ and } \forall\ i$$

The twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

- ☞ how can one tell whether or not a given automorphism u is a BDA?

The twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

- how can one tell whether or not a given automorphism u is a BDA?
- Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;:=\; \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g^2) = \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\mathrm{tr}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^2\right]$$

$$\mathrm{FS}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) = \begin{cases} +1, & \text{if } \boldsymbol{r}_i \text{ is a real representation,}\\ 0, & \text{if } \boldsymbol{r}_i \text{ is a complex representation,}\\ -1, & \text{if } \boldsymbol{r}_i \text{ is a pseudo–real representation.}\end{cases}$$

The twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

- how can one tell whether or not a given automorphism u is a BDA?
- Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;:=\; \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g^2)=\frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\mathrm{tr}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^2\right]$$

Bickerstaff & Damhus [1985], Kawanaka & Matsuyama [1990]

- twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}_u(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;=\; \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)\right]_{\alpha\beta}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g))\right]_{\beta\alpha}$$

The twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

- ☞ how can one tell whether or not a given automorphism u is a BDA?
- ☞ Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;:=\; \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g^2) = \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\mathrm{tr}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)^2\right]$$

Bickerstaff & Damhus [1985], Kawanaka & Matsuyama [1990]

- ☞ twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}_u(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;=\; \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g)\right]_{\alpha\beta}\left[\rho_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(u(g))\right]_{\beta\alpha}$$

- ☞ crucial property

$$\mathrm{FS}_u(\boldsymbol{r}_i) = \begin{cases} +1 \quad \forall\; i, & \text{if } u \text{ is a BDA,}\\ +1 \text{ or } -1 \quad \forall\; i, & \text{if } u \text{ is class–inverting \& involutory,}\\ \text{different from } \pm 1, & \text{otherwise.}\end{cases}$$

Extended twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

- ☞ extended twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}_{u}^{(n)}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;:=\; \frac{(\dim \boldsymbol{r}_i)^{n-1}}{|G|^n} \sum_{g_1,\dots,g_n\in G} \chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g_1\,u(g_1)\cdots g_n\,u(g_n))$$

$$n = \begin{cases} \mathrm{ord}(u)/2 & \text{if } \mathrm{ord}(u) \text{ is even} \\ \mathrm{ord}(u) & \text{if } \mathrm{ord}(u) \text{ is odd} \end{cases}$$

Extended twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

☞ extended twisted Frobenius–Schur indicator

$$\mathrm{FS}_u^{(n)}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) \;:=\; \frac{(\dim \boldsymbol{r}_i)^{n-1}}{|G|^n} \sum_{g_1,\dots,g_n\in G} \chi_{\boldsymbol{r}_i}(g_1\,u(g_1)\cdots g_n\,u(g_n))$$

☞ crucial property

$$\mathrm{FS}_u^{(n)}(\boldsymbol{r}_i) = \begin{cases} \pm1 \quad \forall\ i, & \text{if } u \text{ is class–inverting,} \\ \text{different from } \pm1 & \\ \text{for at least one } \boldsymbol{r}_i, & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

▸ back

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation with an unbroken $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

Example: $\mathrm{SU}(3) \to \mathrm{T}_7$

☞ Starting point: $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge theory with

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; (D_\mu\,\phi)^\dagger\,(D^\mu\,\phi) - \frac{1}{4}\,G_{\mu\nu}^a\,G^{\mu\nu,a} - \mathscr{V}(\phi)$$

$D_\mu = \partial_\mu - \mathrm{i}g\,A_\mu$

field strength

Example: $\mathrm{SU}(3) \to \mathrm{T}_7$

- Starting point: $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge theory with

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; \left(D_\mu\,\phi\right)^\dagger \left(D^\mu\,\phi\right) - \frac{1}{4}\,G_{\mu\nu}^{a}\,G^{\mu\nu,a} - \mathscr{V}(\phi)$$

$\mathbf{15}$–plet

Example: $\mathrm{SU}(3) \to \mathrm{T}_7$

- ☞ Starting point: $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge theory with

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; (D_\mu\,\phi)^\dagger\,(D^\mu\,\phi) - \frac{1}{4}\,G_{\mu\nu}^a\,G^{\mu\nu,a} - \mathscr{V}(\phi)$$

- ☞ Potential: $\mathscr{V}(\phi) \;=\; -\,\mu^2\,\phi^\dagger\phi + \sum\limits_{i=1}^{5}\lambda_i\,\mathcal{I}^{(4)}{}_i(\phi)$

quartic $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ invariants

Example: $\mathrm{SU}(3) \to \mathrm{T}_7$

- Starting point: $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge theory with

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; (D_\mu\,\phi)^\dagger\,(D^\mu\,\phi) - \frac{1}{4}\,G^a_{\mu\nu}\,G^{\mu\nu,a} - \mathscr{V}(\phi)$$

- Potential: $\mathscr{V}(\phi) \;=\; -\,\mu^2\,\phi^\dagger\phi + \sum\limits_{i=1}^{5}\lambda_i\,\mathcal{I}^{(4)}{}_i(\phi)$

- Action invariant under $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$\begin{aligned} A^a_\mu(x) &\xmapsto{\mathrm{SU}(3)-\mathcal{CP}} R^{ab}\,\mathcal{P}_\mu^{\;\nu}\,A^b_\nu(\mathcal{P}\,x)\\ \phi_i(x) &\xmapsto{\mathrm{SU}(3)-\mathcal{CP}} U_{ij}\,\phi^*_j(\mathcal{P}\,x)\end{aligned}$$

$\mathcal{P} = \mathrm{diag}(1,-1,-1,-1)$

Example: $\mathrm{SU}(3) \to \mathrm{T}_7$

- Starting point: $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge theory with

$$\mathscr{L} \;=\; (D_\mu\,\phi)^\dagger\,(D^\mu\,\phi) - \frac{1}{4}\,G^a_{\mu\nu}\,G^{\mu\nu,a} - \mathscr{V}(\phi)$$

- Potential: $\mathscr{V}(\phi) \;=\; -\,\mu^2\,\phi^\dagger\phi + \sum\limits_{i=1}^{5}\lambda_i\,\mathcal{I}^{(4)}{}_i(\phi)$

- Action invariant under $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation

$$U\;\left(-\mathsf{t}_a^{\mathrm{T}}\right)\;U^{-1}\;=\;R_{ab}\,\mathsf{t}_b$$

$$A^a_\mu(x) \xmapsto{\mathrm{SU}(3)-\mathcal{CP}} R^{ab}\,\mathcal{P}_\mu^{\;\nu}\,A^b_\nu(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

$$\phi_i(x) \xmapsto{\mathrm{SU}(3)-\mathcal{CP}} U_{ij}\,\phi^*_j(\mathcal{P}\,x)$$

$\mathrm{SU}(3) \to \mathsf{T}_7$

see e.g. Luhn [2011], Merle & Zwicky [2012]

☞ $\langle\phi\rangle$ breaks $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ to T_7

$$\mathrm{SU}(3) \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_2 \xrightarrow{\langle\phi\rangle} \mathsf{T}_7 \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_2$$

$\mathrm{SU}(3) \to \mathsf{T}_7$

see e.g. Luhn [2011], Merle & Zwicky [2012]

☞ $\langle\phi\rangle$ breaks $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ to T_7

$$\mathrm{SU}(3) \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_2 \xrightarrow{\langle\phi\rangle} \mathsf{T}_7 \rtimes \mathbb{Z}_2$$

☞ Physical fields before and after symmetry breaking

name	$\mathrm{SU}(3) \xrightarrow{\langle\phi\rangle}$	name	T_7
A_μ	$\mathbf{8}$	Z_μ	$\mathbf{1_1}$
		W_μ	$\mathbf{3}$
ϕ	$\mathbf{15}$	$\mathrm{Re}\,\sigma_0, \mathrm{Im}\,\sigma_0$	$\mathbf{1_0}$
		σ_1	$\mathbf{1_1}$
		τ_1	$\mathbf{3}$
		τ_2	$\mathbf{3}$
		τ_3	$\mathbf{3}$

$\mathrm{SU}(3)-\mathcal{CP}$ vs. $\mathrm{Out}(\mathsf{T}_7)$

☞ $\mathrm{SU}(3)-\mathcal{CP}$ breaks to unique $\mathbb{Z}_2$ outer automorphism of T_7

$$\mathrm{Out}(\mathsf{T}_7)\ :\qquad \boldsymbol{1_1} \longleftrightarrow \boldsymbol{1_1}\;,\quad \overline{\boldsymbol{1}}_{\boldsymbol{1}} \longleftrightarrow \overline{\boldsymbol{1}}_{\boldsymbol{1}}\;,\quad \boldsymbol{3} \longleftrightarrow \overline{\boldsymbol{3}}$$

$\mathrm{SU}(3)-\mathcal{CP}$ vs. $\mathrm{Out}(\mathrm{T}_7)$

- ☞ $\mathrm{SU}(3)-\mathcal{CP}$ breaks to unique $\mathbb{Z}_2$ outer automorphism of T_7

$$\mathrm{Out}(\mathrm{T}_7)\;:\qquad \mathbf{1_1}\longleftrightarrow\mathbf{1_1}\;,\quad \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1}\longleftrightarrow\overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1}\;,\quad \mathbf{3}\longleftrightarrow\overline{\mathbf{3}}$$

- ☞ T_7 character table

T_7	C_{1a}	C_{3a}	C_{3b}	C_{7a}	C_{7b}
	e	b	b^2	a	a^3
$\mathbf{1_0}$	1	1	1	1	1
$\mathbf{1_1}$	1	ω	ω^2	1	1
$\overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1}$	1	ω^2	ω	1	1
$\mathbf{3}$	3	0	0	η	η^*
$\overline{\mathbf{3}}$	3	0	0	η^*	η

$\mathrm{SU}(3) - \mathcal{CP}$ vs. $\mathrm{Out}(\mathrm{T}_7)$

- $\mathrm{SU}(3) - \mathcal{CP}$ breaks to unique $\mathbb{Z}_2$ outer automorphism of T_7

$$\mathrm{Out}(\mathrm{T}_7)\ :\qquad \mathbf{1_1} \longleftrightarrow \mathbf{1_1}\ ,\quad \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} \longleftrightarrow \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1}\ ,\quad \mathbf{3} \longleftrightarrow \overline{\mathbf{3}}$$

- T_7 character table

T_7	C_{1a} e	C_{3a} b	C_{3b} b^2	C_{7a} a	C_{7b} a^3
$\mathbf{1_0}$	1	1	1	1	1
$\mathbf{1_1}$	1	ω	ω^2	1	1
$\overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1}$	1	ω^2	ω	1	1
$\mathbf{3}$	3	0	0	η	η^*
$\overline{\mathbf{3}}$	3	0	0	η^*	η

$\omega := \mathrm{e}^{2\pi\mathrm{i}/3}$

$\eta = \rho + \rho^2 + \rho^4$ with $\rho := \mathrm{e}^{2\pi\mathrm{i}/7}$

$\mathrm{SU}(3)-\mathcal{CP}$ vs. $\mathrm{Out}(\mathrm{T}_7)$

- $\mathrm{SU}(3)-\mathcal{CP}$ breaks to unique $\mathbb{Z}_2$ outer automorphism of T_7

$$\mathrm{Out}(\mathrm{T}_7)\quad:\qquad \mathbf{1_1}\longleftrightarrow\mathbf{1_1}\;,\quad \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1}\longleftrightarrow\overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1}\;,\quad \mathbf{3}\longleftrightarrow\overline{\mathbf{3}}$$

- T_7 character table

T_7	C_{1a}	C_{3a}	C_{3b}	C_{7a}	C_{7b}
	e	b	b^2	a	a^3
$\mathbf{1_0}$	1	1	1	1	1
$\mathbf{1_1}$	1	ω	ω^2	1	1
$\overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1}$	1	ω^2	ω	1	1
$\mathbf{3}$	3	0	0	η	η^*
$\overline{\mathbf{3}}$	3	0	0	η^*	η

- $\mathbf{1_1}$ and $\overline{\mathbf{1_1}}$ do **not** get swapped!

T_7

☞ T_7 can be generated by two elements with the presentation

$$\left\langle \mathsf{a}, \mathsf{b} \;\middle|\; \mathsf{a}^7 \;=\; \mathsf{b}^3 \;=\; \mathsf{e}\,, \mathsf{b}^{-1}\,\mathsf{a}\,\mathsf{b} \;=\; \mathsf{a}^4 \right\rangle$$

T_7

- ☞ T_7 can be generated by two elements with the presentation

$$\left\langle \mathsf{a}, \mathsf{b} \;\middle|\; \mathsf{a}^7 \;=\; \mathsf{b}^3 \;=\; \mathsf{e}\,, \mathsf{b}^{-1}\,\mathsf{a}\,\mathsf{b} \;=\; \mathsf{a}^4 \right\rangle$$

- ☞ Triplet representation

$$A \;=\; \begin{pmatrix} \rho & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \rho^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \rho^4 \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad B \;=\; \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

T_7

- ☞ T_7 can be generated by two elements with the presentation

$$\left\langle \mathsf{a}, \mathsf{b} \;\middle|\; \mathsf{a}^7 \;=\; \mathsf{b}^3 \;=\; \mathsf{e}\,, \mathsf{b}^{-1}\,\mathsf{a}\,\mathsf{b} \;=\; \mathsf{a}^4 \right\rangle$$

- ☞ Triplet representation

$$A \;=\; \begin{pmatrix} \rho & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \rho^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \rho^4 \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad B \;=\; \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

- ☞ Embedding into $\mathrm{SU}(3)$

$$X^{(\boldsymbol{r})} \;=\; \exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\alpha_a\,\mathsf{t}_a^{(\boldsymbol{r})}\right)$$

$$\vec{\alpha}^{(A)} \;=\; \frac{2\pi}{7}\,(0,0,0,0,0,0,\,\sqrt{3},5)$$

T_7

- ☞ T_7 can be generated by two elements with the presentation

$$\left\langle \mathsf{a}, \mathsf{b} \;\middle|\; \mathsf{a}^7 ~=~ \mathsf{b}^3 ~=~ \mathsf{e}\,, \mathsf{b}^{-1}\,\mathsf{a}\,\mathsf{b} ~=~ \mathsf{a}^4 \right\rangle$$

- ☞ Triplet representation

$$A ~=~ \begin{pmatrix} \rho & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \rho^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \rho^4 \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad B ~=~ \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

- ☞ Embedding into $\mathrm{SU}(3)$

$$X^{(\boldsymbol{r})} ~=~ \exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\alpha_a\,\mathsf{t}_a^{(\boldsymbol{r})}\right)$$

$$\vec{\alpha}^{(B)} ~=~ \frac{4\pi}{3\,\sqrt{3}}\,(0,0,1,1,1,0,0,0)$$

T$_7$

- T$_7$ can be generated by two elements with the presentation

$$\langle \mathsf{a},\mathsf{b} \mid \mathsf{a}^7 = \mathsf{b}^3 = \mathsf{e}\,,\mathsf{b}^{-1}\,\mathsf{a}\,\mathsf{b} = \mathsf{a}^4\rangle$$

- Triplet representation

$$A = \begin{pmatrix}\rho & 0 & 0\\ 0 & \rho^2 & 0\\ 0 & 0 & \rho^4\end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad B = \begin{pmatrix}0 & 1 & 0\\ 0 & 0 & 1\\ 1 & 0 & 0\end{pmatrix}$$

- Embedding into $\mathrm{SU}(3)$

$$X^{(\boldsymbol{r})} = \exp\left(\mathsf{i}\,\alpha_a\,\mathsf{t}_a^{(\boldsymbol{r})}\right)$$

- Work in `SusyNo` basis

Fonseca [2012]

T_7 scalar states

☞ Branchings:

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{8} &\to \mathbf{1_1} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}} \\ \mathbf{15} &\to \mathbf{1_0} \oplus \mathbf{1_1} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}} \end{aligned}$$

T_7 scalar states

- Branchings:

$$\mathbf{8} \;\to\; \mathbf{1_1} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}}$$

$$\mathbf{15} \;\to\; \mathbf{1_0} \oplus \mathbf{1_1} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}}$$

- Physical scalar fields (would–be Goldstone bosons subtracted)

$$\phi \;=\; \left(v + \phi_1,\, \frac{\phi_2}{\sqrt{2}},\, \frac{\phi_2^*}{\sqrt{2}},\, \phi_4,\, \phi_5,\, \phi_6,\, \frac{\phi_7}{\sqrt{2}},\, \frac{\phi_8}{\sqrt{2}},\, \frac{\phi_9}{\sqrt{2}},\, \phi_{10},\, \phi_{11},\, \phi_{12},\, \frac{\phi_7^*}{\sqrt{2}},\, \frac{\phi_8^*}{\sqrt{2}},\, \frac{\phi_9^*}{\sqrt{2}}\right)$$

T_7 scalar states

- ☞ Branchings:

$$\mathbf{8} \;\to\; \mathbf{1_1} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}}$$

$$\mathbf{15} \;\to\; \mathbf{1_0} \oplus \mathbf{1_1} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}}$$

- ☞ Physical scalar fields (would–be Goldstone bosons subtracted)

$$\phi \;=\; \left(v+\phi_1,\,\frac{\phi_2}{\sqrt{2}},\,\frac{\phi_2^*}{\sqrt{2}},\,\phi_4,\,\phi_5,\,\phi_6,\,\frac{\phi_7}{\sqrt{2}},\,\frac{\phi_8}{\sqrt{2}},\,\frac{\phi_9}{\sqrt{2}},\,\phi_{10},\,\phi_{11},\,\phi_{12},\,\frac{\phi_7^*}{\sqrt{2}},\,\frac{\phi_8^*}{\sqrt{2}},\,\frac{\phi_9^*}{\sqrt{2}}\right)$$

- ☞ T_7 representations

$$\phi_1 \;\widehat{=}\; \mathbf{1}_0\;, \qquad \phi_2 \;\widehat{=}\; \mathbf{1}_1\;,$$

$$T_1 \;:=\; (\phi_4,\,\phi_5,\,\phi_6) \;\widehat{=}\; \mathbf{3}\;, \qquad T_2 \;:=\; (\phi_7,\,\phi_8,\,\phi_9) \;\widehat{=}\; \mathbf{3}\;,$$

$$\overline{T}_3 \;:=\; (\phi_{10},\,\phi_{11},\,\phi_{12}) \;\widehat{=}\; \overline{\mathbf{3}}$$

T_7 scalar states

- ☞ Branchings:

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{8} &\to \mathbf{1}_1 \oplus \overline{\mathbf{1}}_1 \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}} \\ \mathbf{15} &\to \mathbf{1}_0 \oplus \mathbf{1}_1 \oplus \overline{\mathbf{1}}_1 \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}} \end{aligned}$$

- ☞ Physical scalar fields (would–be Goldstone bosons subtracted)

$$\phi = \left(v + \phi_1, \frac{\phi_2}{\sqrt{2}}, \frac{\phi_2^*}{\sqrt{2}}, \phi_4, \phi_5, \phi_6, \frac{\phi_7}{\sqrt{2}}, \frac{\phi_8}{\sqrt{2}}, \frac{\phi_9}{\sqrt{2}}, \phi_{10}, \phi_{11}, \phi_{12}, \frac{\phi_7^*}{\sqrt{2}}, \frac{\phi_8^*}{\sqrt{2}}, \frac{\phi_9^*}{\sqrt{2}}\right)$$

- ☞ T_7 representations
- ☞ No physical $\mathcal{CP}$ trafo allowed by T_7!

$$\begin{array}{rcccccccccccccccc} & \mathbf{15} & \to & \mathbf{1}_0 & \oplus & \mathbf{1}_1 & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{1}}_1 & \oplus & \mathbf{3} & \oplus & \mathbf{3} & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{3}} & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{3}} \\ \mathbb{Z}_2-\mathrm{Out}: & \big\downarrow & & & & & & & & & & & & & & \\ & \overline{\mathbf{15}} & \to & \mathbf{1}_0 & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{1}}_1 & \oplus & \mathbf{1}_1 & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{3}} & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{3}} & \oplus & \mathbf{3} & \oplus & \mathbf{3} \end{array}$$

T_7 scalar states

- Branchings:

$$\mathbf{8} \;\to\; \mathbf{1_1} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}}$$

$$\mathbf{15} \;\to\; \mathbf{1_0} \oplus \mathbf{1_1} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}} \oplus \overline{\mathbf{3}}$$

- Physical scalar fields (would–be Goldstone bosons subtracted)

$$\phi \;=\; \left(v+\phi_1,\, \frac{\phi_2}{\sqrt{2}},\, \frac{\phi_2^*}{\sqrt{2}},\, \phi_4,\, \phi_5,\, \phi_6,\, \frac{\phi_7}{\sqrt{2}},\, \frac{\phi_8}{\sqrt{2}},\, \frac{\phi_9}{\sqrt{2}},\, \phi_{10},\, \phi_{11},\, \phi_{12},\, \frac{\phi_7^*}{\sqrt{2}},\, \frac{\phi_8^*}{\sqrt{2}},\, \frac{\phi_9^*}{\sqrt{2}}\right)$$

- T_7 representations

- No physical $\mathcal{CP}$ trafo allowed by T_7!

$$\begin{tikzcd}
 & \mathbf{15} \arrow[dd] & \rightarrow & \mathbf{1_0} \arrow[dd] & \oplus & \mathbf{1_1} \arrow[ddrr] & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} \arrow[ddll] & \oplus & \mathbf{3} \arrow[dd] & \oplus & \mathbf{3} \arrow[dd] & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{3}} \arrow[dd] & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{3}} \arrow[dd] \\
\mathbb{Z}_2-\mathrm{Out}: & & & & & & & & & & & & & & & \\
 & \overline{\mathbf{15}} & \rightarrow & \mathbf{1_0} & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{1}}_\mathbf{1} & \oplus & \mathbf{1_1} & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{3}} & \oplus & \overline{\mathbf{3}} & \oplus & \mathbf{3} & \oplus & \mathbf{3}
\end{tikzcd}$$

Scalar masses

☞ VEV

$$|v| \;=\; \mu \times 3\,\sqrt{\frac{7}{2}}\left(-7\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_1+14\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_2+20\,\sqrt{6}\,\lambda_4+13\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_5\right)^{-1/2}$$

Scalar masses

- ☞ VEV

$$|v| \;=\; \mu \times 3\,\sqrt{\frac{7}{2}}\left(-7\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_1 + 14\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_2 + 20\,\sqrt{6}\,\lambda_4 + 13\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_5\right)^{-1/2}$$

- ☞ T_7 $\mathbf{1}$–plet representations

$$\begin{aligned} \operatorname{Re}\sigma_0 &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\phi_1+\phi_1^*\right) \qquad \operatorname{Im}\sigma_0 \;=\; -\frac{\mathrm{i}}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\phi_1-\phi_1^*\right)\\ \sigma_1 &= \phi_2 \end{aligned}$$

Scalar masses

- VEV

$$|v| \;=\; \mu \times 3\,\sqrt{\frac{7}{2}}\left(-7\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_1 + 14\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_2 + 20\,\sqrt{6}\,\lambda_4 + 13\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_5\right)^{-1/2}$$

- T$_7$ **1**–plet representations

can be eliminated gauging accidental $\mathrm{U}(1)$

$$\mathrm{Re}\,\sigma_0 \;=\; \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\,(\phi_1 + \phi_1^*) \qquad \mathrm{Im}\,\sigma_0 \;=\; -\frac{\mathrm{i}}{\sqrt{2}}\,(\phi_1 - \phi_1^*)$$

$$\sigma_1 \;=\; \phi_2$$

Scalar masses

☞ VEV

$$|v| \;=\; \mu\times 3\,\sqrt{\frac{7}{2}}\left(-7\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_1+14\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_2+20\,\sqrt{6}\,\lambda_4+13\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_5\right)^{-1/2}$$

☞ T_7 $\mathbf{1}$–plet representations

$$\begin{aligned}\mathrm{Re}\,\sigma_0 &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\,(\phi_1+\phi_1^*) \qquad \mathrm{Im}\,\sigma_0 \;=\; -\frac{\mathrm{i}}{\sqrt{2}}\,(\phi_1-\phi_1^*)\\ \sigma_1 &= \phi_2\end{aligned}$$

☞ Masses

$$\begin{aligned}m^2_{\mathrm{Re}\,\sigma_0} &= 2\,\mu^2\,, \qquad m^2_{\mathrm{Im}\,\sigma_0} \;=\; 0\\ m^2_{\sigma_1} &= -\,\mu^2+\,\sqrt{15}\,\lambda_5\,v^2\end{aligned}$$

Gauge fields

☞ Gauge fields

$$\begin{aligned}
Z^\mu &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\,(A_7^\mu - \mathsf{i}\,A_8^\mu)\\
W_1^\mu &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\,(A_4^\mu - \mathsf{i}\,A_1^\mu)\\
W_2^\mu &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\,(A_5^\mu - \mathsf{i}\,A_2^\mu)\\
W_3^\mu &= \frac{\mathsf{i}}{\sqrt{2}}\,(A_6^\mu - \mathsf{i}\,A_3^\mu)
\end{aligned}$$

Gauge fields

- Gauge fields

$$\begin{aligned}
Z^\mu &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\,(A_7^\mu - \mathsf{i}\,A_8^\mu)\\
W_1^\mu &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\,(A_4^\mu - \mathsf{i}\,A_1^\mu)\\
W_2^\mu &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\,(A_5^\mu - \mathsf{i}\,A_2^\mu)\\
W_3^\mu &= \frac{\mathsf{i}}{\sqrt{2}}\,(A_6^\mu - \mathsf{i}\,A_3^\mu)
\end{aligned}$$

- Masses

$$m_Z^2 = \frac{7}{3}\,g^2\,v^2 \quad \text{and} \quad m_W^2 = g^2\,v^2$$

Triplet mass eigenstates

- ☞ Mass eigenstates

$$\begin{pmatrix}\tau_1\\ \tau_2\\ \tau_3\end{pmatrix} = \underbrace{\begin{pmatrix}V_{11} & V_{12} & V_{13}\\ V_{21} & V_{22} & V_{23}\\ V_{31} & V_{32} & V_{33}\end{pmatrix}}_{=\,V} \begin{pmatrix}T_2\\ \overline{T}_3^*\\ T_1\end{pmatrix}$$

Triplet mass eigenstates

- ☞ Mass eigenstates

$$\begin{pmatrix}\tau_1\\ \tau_2\\ \tau_3\end{pmatrix} = \underbrace{\begin{pmatrix}V_{11} & V_{12} & V_{13}\\ V_{21} & V_{22} & V_{23}\\ V_{31} & V_{32} & V_{33}\end{pmatrix}}_{=V}\begin{pmatrix}T_2\\ \overline{T}_3^*\\ T_1\end{pmatrix}$$

- ☞ Masses and mixing matrix depend on potential parameters

T_7 outer automorphism vs. $\mathcal{CP}$

☞ $\mathrm{Out}(\mathsf{T}_7)$

$$\begin{array}{lllllll} Z_\mu(x) \mapsto & -\mathcal{P}_\mu^{\ \nu}\, Z_\nu(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \sigma_0(x) \mapsto & \sigma_0(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & & \\ W_\mu(x) \mapsto & \mathcal{P}_\mu^{\ \nu}\, W_\nu^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \sigma_1(x) \mapsto & \sigma_1(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \tau_i(x) \mapsto & \tau_i^*(\mathcal{P}\,x) \end{array}$$

T_7 outer automorphism vs. $\mathcal{CP}$

- ☞ $\mathrm{Out}(\mathsf{T}_7)$

$$\begin{array}{llll} Z_\mu(x) \;\mapsto\; -\mathcal{P}_\mu^{\;\nu}\,Z_\nu(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \sigma_0(x) \;\mapsto\; \sigma_0(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \\ W_\mu(x) \mapsto \quad \mathcal{P}_\mu^{\;\nu}\,W_\nu^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \sigma_1(x) \;\mapsto\; \sigma_1(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \tau_i(x) \;\mapsto\; \tau_i^*(\mathcal{P}\,x) \end{array}$$

- ☞ Mode expansion

$$\boldsymbol{\sigma}_1(x) \;=\; \int\widetilde{\mathrm{d}p}\,\left\{\boldsymbol{a}(\vec{p})\,\mathrm{e}^{-\mathsf{i}\,p\,x}+\boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(\vec{p})\,\mathrm{e}^{\mathsf{i}\,p\,x}\right\}$$

T_7 outer automorphism vs. $\mathcal{CP}$

- ☞ $\mathrm{Out}(\mathsf{T}_7)$

$$\begin{array}{lllllll} Z_\mu(x) & \mapsto & -\mathcal{P}_\mu^{\nu}\, Z_\nu(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \sigma_0(x) & \mapsto & \sigma_0(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \\ W_\mu(x) & \mapsto & \mathcal{P}_\mu^{\nu}\, W_\nu^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \sigma_1(x) & \mapsto & \sigma_1(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \tau_i(x) \;\mapsto\; \tau_i^*(\mathcal{P}\,x) \end{array}$$

- ☞ Mode expansion

$$\boldsymbol{\sigma}_1(x) \;=\; \int \widetilde{\mathrm{d}p}\,\left\{\boldsymbol{a}(\vec{p})\,\mathrm{e}^{-\mathsf{i}\,p\,x} + \boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(\vec{p})\,\mathrm{e}^{\mathsf{i}\,p\,x}\right\}$$

- ☞ Outer automorphism of T_7

$$\mathrm{Out}(\mathsf{T}_7)\;:\quad \boldsymbol{a}(\vec{p}) \;\mapsto\; \boldsymbol{a}(-\vec{p}) \qquad \text{and} \qquad \boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(\vec{p}) \;\mapsto\; \boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(-\vec{p})$$

T_7 outer automorphism vs. $\mathcal{CP}$

- ☞ $\mathrm{Out}(\mathsf{T}_7)$

$$\begin{array}{lll} Z_\mu(x) \mapsto -\mathcal{P}_\mu^{\ \nu}\,Z_\nu(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \sigma_0(x) \mapsto \sigma_0(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \\ W_\mu(x) \mapsto \mathcal{P}_\mu^{\ \nu}\,W_\nu^*(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \sigma_1(x) \mapsto \sigma_1(\mathcal{P}\,x)\;, & \tau_i(x) \mapsto \tau_i^*(\mathcal{P}\,x) \end{array}$$

- ☞ Mode expansion

$$\boldsymbol{\sigma}_1(x) = \int\widetilde{\mathrm{d}p}\,\left\{\boldsymbol{a}(\vec{p})\,\mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i}\,p\,x}+\boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(\vec{p})\,\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\,p\,x}\right\}$$

- ☞ Outer automorphism of T_7

$$\mathrm{Out}(\mathsf{T}_7)\ :\quad \boldsymbol{a}(\vec{p}) \mapsto \boldsymbol{a}(-\vec{p}) \qquad \text{and} \qquad \boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(\vec{p}) \mapsto \boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(-\vec{p})$$

- ☞ QFT $\mathcal{CP}$ not a symmetry of the action

$$\mathcal{CP}\ :\quad \boldsymbol{a}(\vec{p}) \mapsto \boldsymbol{b}(-\vec{p}) \qquad \text{and} \qquad \boldsymbol{b}^\dagger(\vec{p}) \mapsto \boldsymbol{a}^\dagger(-\vec{p})$$

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation in the T_7 phase

- ☞ Decay asymmetry

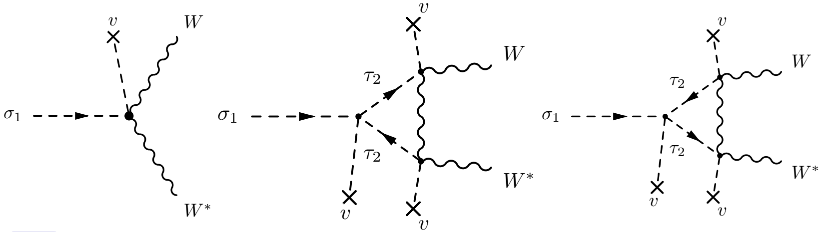
$$\varepsilon_{\sigma_1\to W\,W^*} \;:=\; \frac{\left|\mathscr{M}(\sigma_1\to W\,W^*)\right|^2-\left|\mathscr{M}(\sigma_1^*\to W\,W^*)\right|^2}{\left|\mathscr{M}(\sigma_1\to W\,W^*)\right|^2+\left|\mathscr{M}(\sigma_1^*\to W\,W^*)\right|^2}$$

$\mathcal{CP}$ violation in the T_7 phase

- Decay asymmetry

$$\varepsilon_{\sigma_1\to W\,W^*} \quad := \quad \frac{\left|\mathscr{M}(\sigma_1\to W\,W^*)\right|^2-\left|\mathscr{M}(\sigma_1^*\to W\,W^*)\right|^2}{\left|\mathscr{M}(\sigma_1\to W\,W^*)\right|^2+\left|\mathscr{M}(\sigma_1^*\to W\,W^*)\right|^2}$$

- $\mathcal{CP}$ violation from interference between tree–level and 1–loop



back

Metaplectic flavor symmetries

(Details)

Modular vs. metaplectic flavor symmetries

☞ The zero modes have halfinteger modular weights

$$K_{i\bar{\imath}} \propto \frac{1}{(\operatorname{Im}\tau)^{1/2}}$$

Modular vs. metaplectic flavor symmetries

☞ The zero modes have halfinteger modular weights

$$K_{i\bar{\imath}} \propto \frac{1}{(\operatorname{Im}\tau)^{1/2}}$$

internal 4D

object	$\psi^{j,M}$	$\phi^{j,M}$	$\Omega^{j,M}$	Y_{ijk}	$\mathscr{W}$
modular weight k	$^1/_2$	$-^1/_2$	0	$^1/_2$	-1

$$\Omega^{j,M} = \phi^{j,M}(x^\mu) \otimes \psi^{j,M}(z,\tau)$$

Modular vs. metaplectic flavor symmetries

☞ The zero modes have halfinteger modular weights

$$K_{i\bar{\imath}} \propto \frac{1}{(\operatorname{Im}\tau)^{1/2}}$$

object	$\psi^{j,M}$	$\phi^{j,M}$	$\Omega^{j,M}$	Y_{ijk}	$\mathscr{W}$
modular weight k	$1/2$	$-1/2$	0	$1/2$	-1

☞ One has to be careful with signs in modular transformations: metaplectic symmetries

Transformation laws for 4D superfields (for odd M)

$$\psi^{j,M}\,(z,\tau,0) \xmapsto{S} \frac{\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\,\frac{\pi}{4}}}{\sqrt{M}}\left(-\frac{\tau}{|\tau|}\right)^{1/2}\sum_{k=0}^{M-1}\mathrm{e}^{2\pi\mathrm{i}jk/M}\,\psi^{k,M}\,(z,\tau,0)$$

$$= -\left(-\frac{\tau}{|\tau|}\right)^{1/2}\left[\rho(S)^{\psi}_{M}\right]_{jk}\psi^{k,M}(z,\tau,0)$$

$$\psi^{j,M}\,(z,\tau,0) \xmapsto{T} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\pi M\frac{\operatorname{Im} z}{2\operatorname{Im}\tau}}\,\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\pi j(j/M+1)}\,\psi^{j,M}(z-1/2,\tau,0)$$

$$= \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\pi M\frac{\operatorname{Im} z}{2\operatorname{Im}\tau}}\left[\rho(T)^{\psi}_{M}\right]_{jk}\psi^{k,M}(z-1/2,\tau,0)$$

☞ Representation matrices of generators

$$\left[\rho(S)^{\psi}_{M}\right]_{jk} = -\frac{\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\pi/4}}{\sqrt{M}}\exp\left(\frac{2\pi\mathrm{i}\,j\,k}{M}\right)$$

$$\left[\rho(T)^{\psi}_{M}\right]_{jk} = \exp\left[\mathrm{i}\pi\,j\left(\frac{j}{M}+1\right)\right]\delta_{jk}$$

Transformation laws for Yukawa couplings

$$\mathcal{Y}_{\widehat{\alpha}}(\tau) \xmapsto{\widetilde{\gamma}} \mathcal{Y}_{\widehat{\alpha}}(\widetilde{\gamma}\,\tau) = \pm(c\,\tau + d)^{1/2}\,\rho_{\boldsymbol{\lambda}}(\widetilde{\gamma})_{\widehat{\alpha}\widehat{\beta}}\,\mathcal{Y}_{\widehat{\beta}}(\tau)$$

- ☞ Representation matrices of generators

$$\rho_{\boldsymbol{\lambda}}(\widetilde{S})_{\widehat{\alpha}\widehat{\beta}} = -\frac{\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}\pi/4}}{\sqrt{\lambda}}\,\exp\left(\frac{2\pi\mathrm{i}\,\widehat{\alpha}\,\widehat{\beta}}{\lambda}\right)$$

$$\rho_{\boldsymbol{\lambda}}(\widetilde{T})_{\widehat{\alpha}\widehat{\beta}} = \exp\left(\frac{\mathrm{i}\pi\,\widehat{\alpha}^2}{\lambda}\right)\,\delta_{\widehat{\alpha}\widehat{\beta}}$$

bottom–line:

Magnetized tori with $\lambda = \mathrm{lcm}(\#\text{ of flavors})$ exhibit a $\widetilde{\Gamma}_{2\lambda}$ modular flavor symmetry

References I

S. A. Abel & A. W. Owen. N-point amplitudes in intersecting brane models. *Nucl. Phys.*, B682:183–216, 2004. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2003.11.032.

Steven Abel & Keith R. Dienes. Calculating the Higgs Mass in String Theory. 6 2021.

G. Aldazabal, A. Font, Luis E. Ibáñez, A. M. Uranga & G. Violero. Nonperturbative heterotic $D = 6$, $D = 4$, $N=1$ orbifold vacua. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 519:239–281, 1998. doi: 10.1016/S0550-3213(98)00007-8.

Yahya Almumin, Mu-Chun Chen, Víctor Knapp-Pérez, Saúl Ramos-Sánchez, Michael Ratz & Shreya Shukla. Metaplectic Flavor Symmetries from Magnetized Tori. *JHEP*, 05:078, 2021. doi: 10.1007/JHEP05(2021)078.

Guido Altarelli & Ferruccio Feruglio. Tri-bimaximal neutrino mixing from discrete symmetry in extra dimensions. *Nucl. Phys.*, B720:64–88, 2005. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2005.05.005.

References II

Archana Anandakrishnan & Stuart Raby. SU(6) GUT Breaking on a Projective Plane. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 868:627–651, 2013. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2012.12.001.

Lara B. Anderson, James Gray, Andre Lukas & Eran Palti. Heterotic Line Bundle Standard Models. *JHEP*, 06:113, 2012. doi: 10.1007/JHEP06(2012)113.

Lara B. Anderson, James Gray, Nikhil Raghuram & Washington Taylor. Matter in transition. *JHEP*, 04:080, 2016. doi: 10.1007/JHEP04(2016)080.

Ignatios Antoniadis, E. Gava, K. S. Narain & T. R. Taylor. Effective mu term in superstring theory. *Nucl. Phys.*, B432:187–204, 1994.

Takeshi Araki et al. (Non-)Abelian discrete anomalies. *Nucl. Phys.*, B805:124–147, 2008. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2008.07.005.

Joseph J. Atick, Lance J. Dixon & Ashoke Sen. String Calculation of Fayet-Iliopoulos d Terms in Arbitrary Supersymmetric Compactifications. *Nucl. Phys.*, B292:109–149, 1987. doi: 10.1016/0550-3213(87)90639-0.

References III

K. S. Babu, Ilia Gogoladze & Kai Wang. Natural r-parity, mu-term & fermion mass hierarchy from discrete gauge symmetries. *Nucl. Phys.*, B660:322–342, 2003a.

K. S. Babu, Ernest Ma & J. W. F. Valle. Underlying A(4) symmetry for the neutrino mass matrix & the quark mixing matrix. *Phys. Lett.*, B552:207–213, 2003b. doi: 10.1016/S0370-2693(02)03153-2.

D. Bailin & A. Love. Orbifold compactifications of string theory. *Phys. Rept.*, 315:285–408, 1999. doi: 10.1016/S0370-1573(98)00126-4.

Tom Banks & Michael Dine. Note on discrete gauge anomalies. *Phys. Rev.*, D45:1424–1427, 1992.

Alexander Baur, Moritz Kade, Hans Peter Nilles, Saul Ramos-Sanchez & Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. The eclectic flavor symmetry of the $\mathbb{Z}_2$ orbifold. *JHEP*, 02:018, 2021. doi: 10.1007/JHEP02(2021)018.

J. Bernabeu, G. C. Branco & M. Gronau. CP Restrictions on Quark Mass Matrices. *Phys. Lett. B*, 169:243–247, 1986. doi: 10.1016/0370-2693(86)90659-3.

References IV

Florian Beye, Tatsuo Kobayashi & Shogo Kuwakino. Gauge Symmetries in Heterotic Asymmetric Orbifolds. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 875:599–620, 2013. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2013.07.018.

Florian Beye, Tatsuo Kobayashi & Shogo Kuwakino. Gauge Origin of Discrete Flavor Symmetries in Heterotic Orbifolds. *Phys. Lett.*, B736: 433–437, 2014. doi: 10.1016/j.physletb.2014.07.058.

Florian Beye, Tatsuo Kobayashi & Shogo Kuwakino. Gauge extension of non-Abelian discrete flavor symmetry. *JHEP*, 03:153, 2015. doi: 10.1007/JHEP03(2015)153.

R.P. Bickerstaff & T. Damhus. A necessary & sufficient condition for the existence of real coupling coefficients for a finite group. *International Journal of Quantum Chemistry*, XXVII:381–391, 1985.

Steffen Biermann, Andreas Mütter, Erik Parr, Michael Ratz & Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. Discrete remnants of orbifolding. *Phys. Rev. D*, 100(6):066030, 2019. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.100.066030.

References V

Pierre Binétruy, Mary K. Gaillard & Yi-Yen Wu. Supersymmetry breaking & weakly vs. strongly coupled string theory. *Phys. Lett.*, B412: 288–295, 1997.

Michael Blaszczyk, Stefan Groot Nibbelink, Michael Ratz, Fabian Ruehle, Michele Trapletti, et al. A Z2xZ2 standard model. *Phys.Lett.*, B683: 340–348, 2010. doi: 10.1016/j.physletb.2009.12.036.

Vincent Bouchard & Ron Donagi. An SU(5) heterotic standard model. *Phys. Lett.*, B633:783–791, 2006.

Volker Braun, Yang-Hui He, Burt A. Ovrut & Tony Pantev. A heterotic standard model. *Phys. Lett.*, B618:252–258, 2005.

Volker Braun, Philip Candelas, Rhys Davies & Ron Donagi. The MSSM Spectrum from (0,2)-Deformations of the Heterotic Standard Embedding. *JHEP*, 05:127, 2012. doi: 10.1007/JHEP05(2012)127.

Felix Brümmer, Rolf Kappl, Michael Ratz & Kai Schmidt-Hoberg. Approximate R-symmetries & the mu term. *JHEP*, 04:006, 2010. doi: 10.1007/JHEP04(2010)006.

References VI

Wilfried Buchmüller, Koichi Hamaguchi, Oleg Lebedev & Michael Ratz. Supersymmetric standard model from the heterotic string. *Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 96:121602, 2006.

Wilfried Buchmüller, Koichi Hamaguchi, Oleg Lebedev, Saul Ramos-Sánchez & Michael Ratz. Seesaw neutrinos from the heterotic string. *Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 99:021601, 2007.

Wilfried Buchmüller, Riccardo Catena & Kai Schmidt-Hoberg. Small Extra Dimensions from the Interplay of Gauge & Supersymmetry Breaking. *Nucl. Phys.*, B804:70–89, 2008. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2008.06.012.

Wilfried Buchmüller, Emilian Dudas & Yoshiyuki Tatsuta. Tachyon condensation in magnetic compactifications. *JHEP*, 03:070, 2021. doi: 10.1007/JHEP03(2021)070.

A. J. Buras, P. Gambino, M. Gorbahn, S. Jäger & L. Silvestrini. Universal unitarity triangle & physics beyond the standard model. *Phys. Lett.*, B500:161–167, 2001. doi: 10.1016/S0370-2693(01)00061-2.

References VII

Nana G. Cabo Bizet, Tatsuo Kobayashi, Damián K. Mayorga Peña, Susha L. Parameswaran, Matthias Schmitz, et al. R-charge Conservation & More in Factorizable & Non-Factorizable Orbifolds. *JHEP*, 1305:076, 2013. doi: 10.1007/JHEP05(2013)076.

P. Candelas, Gary T. Horowitz, Andrew Strominger & Edward Witten. Vacuum Configurations for Superstrings. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 258:46–74, 1985. doi: 10.1016/0550-3213(85)90602-9.

Brenda Carballo-Pérez, Eduardo Peinado & Saul Ramos-Sánchez. $\Delta(54)$ flavor phenomenology & strings. *JHEP*, 12:131, 2016. doi: 10.1007/JHEP12(2016)131.

J. A. Casas. The generalized dilaton supersymmetry breaking scenario. *Phys. Lett.*, B384:103–110, 1996.

J. A. Casas & C. Muñoz. Three generation SU(3) x SU(2) x U(1)-y models from orbifolds. *Phys. Lett.*, B214:63, 1988.

J. A. Casas, E. K. Katehou & C. Muñoz. U(1) charges in orbifolds: Anomaly cancellation & phenomenological consequences. *Nucl. Phys.*, B317:171, 1989.

References VIII

Ali H. Chamseddine & Herbert K. Dreiner. Anomaly free gauged R symmetry in local supersymmetry. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 458:65–89, 1996. doi: 10.1016/0550-3213(95)00583-8.

Mu-Chun Chen & K. T. Mahanthappa. Group Theoretical Origin of CP Violation. *Phys. Lett. B*, 681:444–447, 2009. doi: 10.1016/j.physletb.2009.10.059.

Mu-Chun Chen, Maximilian Fallbacher, Michael Ratz & Christian Staudt. On predictions from spontaneously broken flavor symmetries. *Phys. Lett. B*, 718:516–521, 2012. doi: 10.1016/j.physletb.2012.10.077.

Mu-Chun Chen, Maximilian Fallbacher, Yuji Omura, Michael Ratz & Christian Staudt. Predictivity of models with spontaneously broken non-Abelian discrete flavor symmetries. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 873:343–371, 2013a. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2013.04.020.

Mu-Chun Chen, Michael Ratz & Andreas Trautner. Non-Abelian discrete R symmetries. *JHEP*, 09:096, 2013b. doi: 10.1007/JHEP09(2013)096.

References IX

Mu-Chun Chen, Maximilian Fallbacher, K. T. Mahanthappa, Michael Ratz & Andreas Trautner. CP Violation from Finite Groups. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 883:267–305, 2014. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2014.03.023.

Mu-Chun Chen, Saúl Ramos-Sánchez & Michael Ratz. A note on the predictions of models with modular flavor symmetries. *Phys. Lett. B*, 801:135153, 2020. doi: 10.1016/j.physletb.2019.135153.

Mu-Chun Chen, Victor Knapp-Perez, Mario Ramos-Hamud, Saul Ramos-Sanchez, Michael Ratz & Shreya Shukla. Quasi-Eclectic Modular Flavor Symmetries. 8 2021.

R. Sekhar Chivukula & Howard Georgi. Composite Technicolor Standard Model. *Phys. Lett.*, B188:99, 1987. doi: 10.1016/0370-2693(87)90713-1.

D. Cremades, L. E. Ibáñez & F. Marchesano. Yukawa couplings in intersecting D-brane models. *JHEP*, 07:038, 2003.

D. Cremades, L. E. Ibáñez & F. Marchesano. Computing Yukawa couplings from magnetized extra dimensions. *JHEP*, 05:079, 2004. doi: 10.1088/1126-6708/2004/05/079.

References X

Niccolò Cribiori, Susha Parameswaran, Flavio Tonioni & Timm Wrase. Modular invariance, misalignment & finiteness in non-supersymmetric strings. 10 2021.

Csaba Csáki & Hitoshi Murayama. Discrete anomaly matching. *Nucl. Phys.*, B515:114–162, 1998.

Csaba Csáki, Martin Schmaltz & Witold Skiba. A Systematic approach to confinement in N=1 supersymmetric gauge theories. *Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 78:799–802, 1997a. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.78.799.

Csaba Csáki, Martin Schmaltz & Witold Skiba. Confinement in N=1 SUSY gauge theories & model building tools. *Phys. Rev. D*, 55: 7840–7858, 1997b. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.55.7840.

G. D'Ambrosio, G. F. Giudice, G. Isidori & A. Strumia. Minimal flavour violation: An effective field theory approach. *Nucl. Phys.*, B645: 155–187, 2002.

Rebecca J. Danos, Andrew R. Frey & Robert H. Brandenberger. Stabilizing moduli with thermal matter & nonperturbative effects. *Phys. Rev. D*, 77:126009, 2008. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.77.126009.

References XI

Keith R. Dienes. Modular invariance, finiteness & misaligned supersymmetry: New constraints on the numbers of physical string states. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 429:533–588, 1994. doi: 10.1016/0550-3213(94)90153-8.

Keith R. Dienes. String theory & the path to unification: A Review of recent developments. *Phys. Rept.*, 287:447–525, 1997. doi: 10.1016/S0370-1573(97)00009-4.

Keith R. Dienes. Solving the hierarchy problem without supersymmetry or extra dimensions: An Alternative approach. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 611: 146–178, 2001. doi: 10.1016/S0550-3213(01)00344-3.

Keith R. Dienes & Alon E. Faraggi. Gauge coupling unification in realistic free fermionic string models. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 457:409–483, 1995. doi: 10.1016/0550-3213(95)00497-1.

Keith R. Dienes, Moshe Moshe & Robert C. Myers. String theory, misaligned supersymmetry & the supertrace constraints. *Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 74:4767–4770, 1995. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.74.4767.

References XII

Jimmy Dillies. Toroidal orbifolds a la Vafa-Witten. *Adv. Theor. Math. Phys.*, 11(4):683–705, 2007. doi: 10.4310/ATMP.2007.v11.n4.a5.

Michael Dine & John Kehayias. Discrete R Symmetries & Low Energy Supersymmetry. *Phys.Rev.*, D82:055014, 2010. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.82.055014.

Michael Dine & Nathan Seiberg. Couplings & Scales in Superstring Models. *Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 55:366, 1985. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.55.366.

Gui-Jun Ding, Ferruccio Feruglio & Xiang-Gan Liu. Automorphic Forms & Fermion Masses. *JHEP*, 01:037, 2021. doi: 10.1007/JHEP01(2021)037.

Lance J. Dixon, Jeffrey A. Harvey, C. Vafa & Edward Witten. Strings on orbifolds. *Nucl. Phys.*, B261:678–686, 1985.

Lance J. Dixon, Jeffrey A. Harvey, C. Vafa & Edward Witten. Strings on orbifolds. 2. *Nucl. Phys.*, B274:285–314, 1986.

References XIII

Lance J. Dixon, Daniel Friedan, Emil J. Martinec & Stephen H. Shenker. The Conformal Field Theory of Orbifolds. *Nucl. Phys.*, B282:13–73, 1987.

Ron Donagi & Alon E. Faraggi. On the number of chiral generations in Z(2) x Z(2) orbifolds. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 694:187–205, 2004. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2004.06.009.

Ron Donagi & Katrin Wendland. On orbifolds & free fermion constructions. *J.Geom.Phys.*, 59:942–968, 2009. doi: 10.1016/j.geomphys.2009.04.004.

Michael R. Douglas & Chen-gang Zhou. Chirality change in string theory. *JHEP*, 06:014, 2004. doi: 10.1088/1126-6708/2004/06/014.

Richard Easther, Brian R. Greene & Mark G. Jackson. Cosmological string gas on orbifolds. *Phys. Rev. D*, 66:023502, 2002. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.66.023502.

References XIV

Jason L. Evans, Masahiro Ibe, John Kehayias & Tsutomu T. Yanagida. Non-Anomalous Discrete R-symmetry Decrees Three Generations. *Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 109:181801, 2012. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.109.181801.

Alon E. Faraggi. Hierarchical top - bottom mass relation in a superstring derived standard - like model. *Phys. Lett. B*, 274:47–52, 1992. doi: 10.1016/0370-2693(92)90302-K.

Ferruccio Feruglio. Are neutrino masses modular forms? 2017.

Maximilian Fischer, Saúl Ramos-Sánchez & Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. Heterotic non-Abelian orbifolds. *JHEP*, 07:080, 2013a. doi: 10.1007/JHEP07(2013)080.

Maximilian Fischer, Michael Ratz, Jesus Torrado & Patrick K.S. Vaudrevange. Classification of symmetric toroidal orbifolds. *JHEP*, 1301:084, 2013b. doi: 10.1007/JHEP01(2013)084.

Renato M. Fonseca. Calculating the renormalisation group equations of a SUSY model with Susyno. *Comput. Phys. Commun.*, 183:2298–2306, 2012. doi: 10.1016/j.cpc.2012.05.017.

References XV

Renato M. Fonseca. GroupMath: A Mathematica package for group theory calculations. *Comput. Phys. Commun.*, 267:108085, 2021. doi: 10.1016/j.cpc.2021.108085.

A. Font, Luis E. Ibáñez, Hans Peter Nilles & F. Quevedo. Yukawa couplings in degenerate orbifolds: Towards a realistic SU(3)×SU(2)×U(1) superstring. *Phys. Lett.*, B210:101, 1988a. Erratum *ibid.* **B213**.

A. Font, Luis E. Ibáñez, Hans Peter Nilles & F. Quevedo. Degenerate orbifolds. *Nucl. Phys.*, B307:109, 1988b. Erratum *ibid.* **B310**.

A. Font, Luis E. Ibáñez, D. Lüst & F. Quevedo. Supersymmetry breaking from duality invariant gaugino condensation. *Phys. Lett.*, B245: 401–408, 1990. doi: 10.1016/0370-2693(90)90665-S.

Stefan Förste, Hans Peter Nilles, Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange & Akin Wingerter. Heterotic brane world. *Phys. Rev.*, D70:106008, 2004.

Stefan Förste, Tatsuo Kobayashi, Hiroshi Ohki & Kei-jiro Takahashi. Non-factorisable Z(2) x Z(2) heterotic orbifold models & Yukawa couplings. 2006.

References XVI

Amit Giveon, Massimo Porrati & Eliezer Rabinovici. Target space duality in string theory. *Phys.Rept.*, 244:77–202, 1994. doi: 10.1016/0370-1573(94)90070-1.

Stefan Groot Nibbelink, Orestis Loukas, Fabian Ruehle & Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. Infinite number of MSSMs from heterotic line bundles? *Phys. Rev. D*, 92(4):046002, 2015. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.92.046002.

Z. Guralnik & S. Ramgoolam. Torons & D-brane bound states. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 499:241–252, 1997. doi: 10.1016/S0550-3213(97)00286-1.

Lawrence J. Hall, Hitoshi Murayama & Yasunori Nomura. Wilson lines & symmetry breaking on orbifolds. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 645:85–104, 2002a. doi: 10.1016/S0550-3213(02)00816-7.

Lawrence J. Hall, Yasunori Nomura & Aaron Pierce. R symmetry & the mu problem. *Phys. Lett.*, B538:359–365, 2002b. doi: 10.1016/S0370-2693(02)02043-9.

Shahram Hamidi & Cumrun Vafa. Interactions on Orbifolds. *Nucl. Phys.*, B279:465, 1987.

References XVII

P. F. Harrison, D. H. Perkins & W. G. Scott. Tri-bimaximal mixing & the neutrino oscillation data. *Phys. Lett.*, B530:167, 2002. doi: 10.1016/S0370-2693(02)01336-9.

A. Hebecker. Grand unification in the projective plane. *JHEP*, 01:047, 2004.

A. Hebecker & M. Trapletti. Gauge unification in highly anisotropic string compactifications. *Nucl. Phys.*, B713:173–203, 2005.

M. Hirsch, J. C. Romao, S. Skadhauge, J. W. F. Valle & Albert Villanova del Moral. Phenomenological tests of supersymmetric A(4) family symmetry model of neutrino mass. *Phys. Rev.*, D69:093006, 2004. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.69.093006.

Martin Holthausen, Manfred Lindner & Michael A. Schmidt. CP & Discrete Flavour Symmetries. *JHEP*, 04:122, 2013. doi: 10.1007/JHEP04(2013)122.

Luis E. Ibáñez. Gauge coupling unification: Strings versus SUSY GUTs. *Phys. Lett. B*, 318:73–76, 1993. doi: 10.1016/0370-2693(93)91786-M.

References XVIII

Luis E. Ibáñez & Graham G. Ross. Discrete gauge symmetry anomalies. *Phys. Lett.*, B260:291–295, 1991.

Luis E. Ibáñez & Angel M. Uranga. *String theory & particle physics: An introduction to string phenomenology*. Cambridge University Press, 2 2012. ISBN 978-0-521-51752-2, 978-1-139-22742-1.

Luis E. Ibáñez, Jihn E. Kim, Hans Peter Nilles & F. Quevedo. Orbifold compactifications with three families of SU(3) x SU(2) x U(1)**n. *Phys. Lett.*, B191:282–286, 1987.

Luis E. Ibáñez, Hans Peter Nilles & F. Quevedo. Orbifolds & Wilson Lines. *Phys. Lett.*, B187:25–32, 1987. doi: 10.1016/0370-2693(87)90066-9.

Luis E. Ibáñez, Hans Peter Nilles & F. Quevedo. Reducing the rank of the gauge group in orbifold compactifications of the heterotic string. *Phys. Lett.*, B192:332, 1987.

Kenneth Intriligator, Nathan Seiberg & David Shih. Dynamical SUSY breaking in meta-stable vacua. *JHEP*, 04:021, 2006.

References XIX

Shamit Kachru & Eva Silverstein. Chirality changing phase transitions in 4-D string vacua. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 504:272–284, 1997. doi: 10.1016/S0550-3213(97)00519-1.

Shamit Kachru, Renata Kallosh, Andrei Linde & Sandip P. Trivedi. De Sitter vacua in string theory. *Phys. Rev.*, D68:046005, 2003. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.68.046005.

Rolf Kappl, Bjoern Petersen, Stuart Raby, Michael Ratz, Roland Schieren & Patrick K.S. Vaudrevange. String-derived MSSM vacua with residual R symmetries. *Nucl.Phys.*, B847:325–349, 2011. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2011.01.032.

Noriaki Kawanaka & Hiroshi Matsuyama. A twisted version of the Frobenius-Schur indicator & multiplicity-free permutation representations. *Hokkaido Math.J.*, 19:495–508, 1990. URL `http://projecteuclid.org/euclid.hokmj/1381517495`.

Shota Kikuchi, Tatsuo Kobayashi, Shintaro Takada, Takuya H. Tatsuishi & Hikaru Uchida. Revisiting modular symmetry in magnetized torus & orbifold compactifications. 5 2020.

References XX

Shota Kikuchi, Tatsuo Kobayashi & Hikaru Uchida. Modular flavor symmetries of three-generation modes on magnetized toroidal orbifolds. 1 2021.

Tatsuo Kobayashi, Stuart Raby & Ren-Jie Zhang. Constructing 5d orbifold grand unified theories from heterotic strings. *Phys. Lett.*, B593:262–270, 2004.

Tatsuo Kobayashi, Stuart Raby & Ren-Jie Zhang. Searching for realistic 4d string models with a Pati-Salam symmetry: Orbifold grand unified theories from heterotic string compactification on a Z(6) orbifold. *Nucl.Phys.*, B704:3–55, 2005. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2004.10.035.

Tatsuo Kobayashi, Hans Peter Nilles, Felix Plöger, Stuart Raby & Michael Ratz. Stringy origin of non-Abelian discrete flavor symmetries. *Nucl. Phys.*, B768:135–156, 2007.

Sebastian J. H. Konopka. Non Abelian orbifold compactifications of the heterotic string. *JHEP*, 07:023, 2013. doi: 10.1007/JHEP07(2013)023.

References XXI

N. V. Krasnikov. On Supersymmetry Breaking in Superstring Theories. *Phys. Lett.*, B193:37–40, 1987. doi: 10.1016/0370-2693(87)90452-7.

Oleg Lebedev, Hans Peter Nilles, Stuart Raby, Saúl Ramos-Sánchez, Michael Ratz, Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange & Akin Wingerter. A mini-landscape of exact MSSM spectra in heterotic orbifolds. *Phys. Lett.*, B645:88, 2007a.

Oleg Lebedev, Hans Peter Nilles, Stuart Raby, Saúl Ramos-Sánchez, Michael Ratz, Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange & Akin Wingerter. The heterotic road to the MSSM with R parity. *Phys. Rev.*, D77:046013, 2007b.

Hyun Min Lee, Stuart Raby, Michael Ratz, Graham G. Ross, Roland Schieren, Kai Schmidt-Hoberg & Patrick K.S. Vaudrevange. A unique Z_4^R symmetry for the MSSM. *Phys.Lett.*, B694:491–495, 2011a. doi: 10.1016/j.physletb.2010.10.038.

References XXII

Hyun Min Lee, Stuart Raby, Michael Ratz, Graham G. Ross, Roland Schieren, Kai Schmidt-Hoberg & Patrick K.S. Vaudrevange. Discrete R symmetries for the MSSM & its singlet extensions. *Nucl.Phys.*, B850:1–30, 2011b. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2011.04.009.

Miriam Leurer, Yosef Nir & Nathan Seiberg. Mass matrix models: The Sequel. *Nucl. Phys.*, B420:468–504, 1994.

Xiang-Gan Liu, Chang-Yuan Yao, Bu-Yao Qu & Gui-Jun Ding. Half-integral weight modular forms & application to neutrino mass models. *Phys. Rev. D*, 102(11):115035, 2020. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.102.115035.

Christoph Luhn. Spontaneous breaking of SU(3) to finite family symmetries: a pedestrian's approach. *JHEP*, 03:108, 2011. doi: 10.1007/JHEP03(2011)108.

Ernest Ma & G. Rajasekaran. Softly broken A(4) symmetry for nearly degenerate neutrino masses. *Phys. Rev.*, D64:113012, 2001. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.64.113012.

References XXIII

Alexander Merle & Roman Zwicky. Explicit & spontaneous breaking of SU(3) into its finite subgroups. *JHEP*, 02:128, 2012. doi: 10.1007/JHEP02(2012)128.

Andreas Mütter & Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. String scale interacting dark matter from π_1. *JHEP*, 06:003, 2020. doi: 10.1007/JHEP06(2020)003.

Ann E. Nelson & Nathan Seiberg. R symmetry breaking versus supersymmetry breaking. *Nucl. Phys.*, B416:46–62, 1994. doi: 10.1016/0550-3213(94)90577-0.

Ann E. Nelson & Matthew J. Strassler. A Realistic supersymmetric model with composite quarks. *Phys.Rev.*, D56:4226–4237, 1997. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.56.4226.

Hans Peter Nilles. Dynamically broken supergravity & the hierarchy problem. *Phys. Lett.*, B115:193, 1982.

Hans Peter Nilles & M. Olechowski. Gaugino condensation & duality invariance. *Phys. Lett.*, B248:268–272, 1990. doi: 10.1016/0370-2693(90)90290-M.

References XXIV

Hans Peter Nilles & S. Stieberger. String unification, universal one-loop corrections & strongly coupled heterotic string theory. *Nucl. Phys.*, B499:3–28, 1997.

Hans Peter Nilles, Saúl Ramos-Sánchez, Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange & Akin Wingerter. The Orbifolder: A Tool to study the Low Energy Effective Theory of Heterotic Orbifolds. *Comput.Phys.Commun.*, 183: 1363–1380, 2012. doi: 10.1016/j.cpc.2012.01.026. web page http://projects.hepforge.org/orbifolder/.

Hans Peter Nilles, Saúl Ramos-Sánchez, Michael Ratz & Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. A note on discrete R symmetries in $\mathbb{Z}_6$-II orbifolds with Wilson lines. *Phys. Lett.*, B726:876–881, 2013. doi: 10.1016/j.physletb.2013.09.041.

Hans Peter Nilles, Michael Ratz, Andreas Trautner & Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. $\mathcal{CP}$ violation from string theory. *Phys. Lett. B*, 786: 283–287, 2018. doi: 10.1016/j.physletb.2018.09.053.

References XXV

Hans Peter Nilles, Saul Ramos-Sanchez & Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. Lessons from eclectic flavor symmetries. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 957:115098, 2020a. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2020.115098.

Hans Peter Nilles, Saúl Ramos-Sánchez & Patrick K.S. Vaudrevange. Eclectic Flavor Groups. *JHEP*, 02:045, 2020b. doi: 10.1007/JHEP02(2020)045.

Hans Peter Nilles, Saúl Ramos–Sánchez & Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. Eclectic flavor scheme from ten-dimensional string theory – I. Basic results. *Phys. Lett. B*, 808:135615, 2020c. doi: 10.1016/j.physletb.2020.135615.

Hans Peter Nilles, Saúl Ramos–Sánchez & Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. Eclectic flavor scheme from ten-dimensional string theory - II detailed technical analysis. *Nucl. Phys. B*, 966:115367, 2021. doi: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2021.115367.

Hiroshi Ohki, Shohei Uemura & Risa Watanabe. Modular flavor symmetry on a magnetized torus. *Phys. Rev. D*, 102(8):085008, 2020. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.102.085008.

References XXVI

Yessenia Olguín-Trejo & Saúl Ramos-Sánchez. Kähler potential of heterotic orbifolds with multiple Kähler moduli. *J. Phys. Conf. Ser.*, 912(1):012029, 2017. doi: 10.1088/1742-6596/912/1/012029.

Saúl Ramos-Sánchez, Michael Ratz, Yuri Shirman, Shreya Shukla & Michael Waterbury. Generation flow in field theory & strings. 9 2021.

Michael Ratz & Andreas Trautner. $\mathcal{CP}$ violation with an unbroken $\mathcal{CP}$ transformation. *JHEP*, 02:103, 2017. doi: 10.1007/JHEP02(2017)103.

Shlomo S. Razamat & David Tong. Gapped Chiral Fermions. *Phys. Rev. X*, 11(1):011063, 2021. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevX.11.011063.

Nathan Seiberg. Exact results on the space of vacua of four–dimensional SUSY gauge theories. *Phys.Rev.*, D49:6857–6863, 1994. doi: 10.1103/PhysRevD.49.6857.

Yael Shadmi & Yuri Shirman. Dynamical supersymmetry breaking. *Rev. Mod. Phys.*, 72:25–64, 2000. doi: 10.1103/RevModPhys.72.25.

M. J. Strassler. Generating a fermion mass hierarchy in a composite supersymmetric standard model. *Phys. Lett. B*, 376:119–126, 1996. doi: 10.1016/0370-2693(96)00243-2.

References XXVII

Gerard 't Hooft. Naturalness, chiral symmetry & spontaneous chiral symmetry breaking. *NATO Adv. Study Inst. Ser. B Phys.*, 59:135, 1980.

Yoshiyuki Tatsuta. Modular symmetry & zeros in magnetic compactifications. 4 2021.

Steven Weinberg. The cosmological constant problem. *Rev. Mod. Phys.*, 61:1–23, 1989. doi: 10.1103/RevModPhys.61.1.

Edward Witten. Dynamical Breaking of Supersymmetry. *Nucl. Phys.*, B188:513, 1981. doi: 10.1016/0550-3213(81)90006-7.

Edward Witten. Strong coupling expansion of calabi–yau compactification. *Nucl. Phys.*, B471:135–158, 1996.